

# Notes on Romans

2024 Edition  
Dr. Thomas L. Constable

## Introduction

### WRITER AND DATE

Throughout the history of the church, from post-apostolic times to the present, Christians have regarded Romans as having been one of the Apostle Paul's epistles.<sup>1</sup> Not only does the letter claim that he wrote it (1:1), but it develops many of the same ideas and uses the same terminology that appear in Paul's earlier writings (e.g., Gal. 2; 1 Cor. 12; 2 Cor. 8—9).

Following his conversion on the Damascus Road (A.D. 34), Paul preached in Damascus, spent some time in Arabia, and then returned to Damascus. Next he traveled to Jerusalem where he met briefly with Peter and James. He then moved on to Tarsus, which was evidently his base of operations from where he ministered for about six years (A.D. 37-43). In response to an invitation from Barnabas, he moved to Antioch of Syria where he served for about five years (A.D. 43-48). He and Barnabas then set out on their so-called first missionary journey into Cyprus and the Roman province of Asia (in Asia Minor, A.D. 48-49). Returning to Antioch of Syria, Paul wrote the Epistle to the Galatians to strengthen the churches that he and Barnabas had just planted in that part of the province of Asia (A.D. 49).

After the Jerusalem Council (Acts 15), Paul took Silas and began his second missionary journey (A.D. 50-52) through Asia, and farther westward into the Roman provinces of Macedonia and Achaia. From Corinth, in Achaia, Paul wrote 1 and 2 Thessalonians (A.D. 51). He then proceeded to Ephesus, in Asia, by ship, and finished the second journey at Antioch of Syria. From there he set out on his third missionary journey (A.D. 53-57). Passing through Asia, he arrived in Ephesus where he labored for three years (A.D.

---

<sup>1</sup>See F. Godet, *Commentary on the Epistle to the Romans*, pp. 45-46; C. E. B. Cranfield, *A Critical and Exegetical Commentary on the Epistle to the Romans*, 1:1-2.

53-56). During this time he wrote 1 Corinthians (A.D. 56). Finally, Paul left Ephesus and traveled by land to Macedonia, where he wrote 2 Corinthians (A.D. 56). He continued south and spent the winter of A.D. 56-57 in Corinth. There he wrote the Epistle to the Romans, and sent it by Phoebe (16:1-2) to the Roman church.<sup>1</sup>

The apostle then proceeded from Corinth, by land, clockwise around the Aegean Sea back to Troas in Asia, where he boarded a ship and eventually reached Jerusalem. In Jerusalem, the Jews arrested Paul and imprisoned him (A.D. 57). Three years later he arrived in Rome as a prisoner, where he ministered for two years (A.D. 60-62). During this two-year time, Paul wrote the Prison Epistles (Ephesians, Philippians, Colossians, and Philemon). The Romans freed Paul, and he returned to the Aegean area. There he wrote 1 Timothy and Titus, was arrested again, suffered imprisonment in Rome a second time, wrote 2 Timothy, and finally died as a martyr under Nero in A.D. 68.<sup>2</sup>



<sup>1</sup>Cf. W. J. Conybeare, in *The Life and Epistles of St. Paul*, p. 497; James D. G. Dunn, *Romans 1-8*, pp. xlili-xliv.

<sup>2</sup>See the appendix "Sequence of Paul's Activities" at the end of these notes for more details.

## RECIPIENTS

We know very little about the founding of the church in Rome.<sup>1</sup> According to Ambrosiaster, a church father who lived in the fourth century, an apostle did not found it—thus discrediting the Roman Catholic claim that Peter founded the church. A group of Jewish Christians did.<sup>2</sup> It is possible that these Jews became believers in Jerusalem on the day of Pentecost (cf. Acts 2:10), or at some other time quite early in the church's history.<sup>3</sup> A similar theory is that converts of the apostles, both Jews and Gentiles, founded the church.<sup>4</sup> By the time Paul wrote Romans, the church in Rome was famous throughout the Roman Empire for its faith (1:8).

"The greeting in Romans does not imply a strongly knit church organization, and chapter 16 gives a picture of small groups of believers rather than of one large group."<sup>5</sup>

## PURPOSES

Paul, under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit, wrote this epistle for several reasons.<sup>6</sup> First, he wanted to prepare the way for his intended visit to this church (15:22-24).

Second, he evidently hoped that Rome would become a base of operations and support for his pioneer missionary work in Spain, as well as in the western portions of the empire that he had not yet evangelized. His full exposition of the gospel in this letter would have provided a solid foundation for the Roman Christians' participation in this mission. As Paul looked forward to returning to Jerusalem, between his departure from

---

<sup>1</sup>See Godet, pp. 36-41; Jack Finegan, *Light from the Ancient Past*, p. 454.

<sup>2</sup>William Sanday and Arthur C. Headlam, *A Critical and Exegetical Commentary on the Epistle to the Romans*, p. xxv.

<sup>3</sup>Conybeare, p. 498.

<sup>4</sup>J. Vernon McGee, *Thru the Bible with J. Vernon McGee*, 4:640.

<sup>5</sup>A. Berkeley Mickelsen, "Romans," in *The Wycliffe Bible Commentary*, p. 1179.

<sup>6</sup>See Godet, pp. 47-58; Philip R. Williams, "Paul's Purpose in Writing Romans," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 128:509 (January-March 1971):62-67; Walter B. Russell, III, "An Alternative Suggestion for the Purpose of Romans," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 145:578 (April-June 1985):174-84; Douglas J. Moo, *The Epistle to the Romans*, pp. 16-22.

Corinth and his arrival in Rome, he was aware of the danger he faced (15:31).

Third, he may have written the exhaustive exposition of the gospel that we have in Romans in order to set forth his teaching in case he did not reach Rome. From Rome his doctrine could then have gone out to the rest of the empire as others preached it. Paul may have viewed Romans as his legacy to the church: his last will and testament.

A fourth reason for writing Romans was undoubtedly Paul's desire to minister to the spiritual needs of the Christians in Rome, even though they were in good spiritual condition (15:14-16). The common problems of all the early churches were dangers to the Roman church as well. These difficulties included internal conflicts, mainly between Jewish and Gentile believers, and external threats, primarily from false teachers. Paul gave both of these potential problems attention in this epistle (15:1-8; 16:17-20).

"He felt that the best protection against the infection of false teaching was the antiseptic of the truth."<sup>1</sup>

"It is interesting to note that this great document of Christian doctrine, which was addressed to the church at Rome to keep it from heresy, did not accomplish its purpose. The Roman church moved the farthest from the faith which is set forth in the Epistle to the Romans. It is an illustration of the truth of this epistle that man does not understand, neither does he seek after God."<sup>2</sup>

Paul also wrote Romans, fifth, because he was at a transition point in his ministry, as he mentioned at the end of chapter 15. His ministry in the Aegean region was established solidly enough that he planned to leave it and move farther west into new, virgin missionary territory. Before he did that, he planned to visit Jerusalem, where he realized he would be in danger. Probably, therefore, Paul wrote Romans as he did to leave a full exposition of the gospel in good hands in case his ministry ended prematurely in Jerusalem.

---

<sup>1</sup>William Barclay, *The Letter to the Romans*, p. xxii.

<sup>2</sup>McGee, 4:645.

"The peculiar position of the apostle at the time of writing, as he reviews the past and anticipates the future, enables us to understand the absence of controversy in this epistle, the conciliatory attitude, and the didactic [instructive] and apologetic [defensive] elements which are all found combined herein."<sup>1</sup>

James Dunn summarized Paul's purposes for writing Romans as three: missionary, apologetic, and pastoral.<sup>2</sup>

### GENRE<sup>3</sup>

Twenty-one of the 27 New Testament books are letters, and they compose about 35 percent of the New Testament. Paul wrote 13 of these letters, making him the most prolific New Testament letter-writer. (Evidence that he wrote Hebrews is lacking.) Paul's letters make up about one-quarter of the New Testament. He wrote more of the New Testament than anyone except Luke.

"While letters were by no means unknown in the world of the ancient Near East (see, e.g., 2 Sam. 11:14-15; Ezra 4—5), it was in the Greco-Roman world that the letter became an established and popular method of communication."<sup>4</sup>

Greco-Roman letters typically contained an address and greeting, a body, and a conclusion. Christian letters usually contained, additionally, a doxology or benediction after the conclusion.

Adolf Deissmann distinguished between "letters" (unstudied, private communications) and "epistles" (carefully composed, public pieces of literature).<sup>5</sup> This rigid distinction is no longer popular, since most scholars view these categories as representing the polar extremes on a continuum. Both secular and inspired correspondences fall somewhere in between

---

<sup>1</sup>W. H. Griffith Thomas, *St. Paul's Epistle to the Romans*, p. 20.

<sup>2</sup>Dunn, pp. lx-lxiii.

<sup>3</sup>"Genre" refers to type of literature.

<sup>4</sup>Donald A. Carson and Douglas J. Moo, *An Introduction to the New Testament*, p. 332.

<sup>5</sup>Adolf Deissmann, "Prolegomena to the Biblical Letters and Epistles," in *Bible Studies*, pp. 1-59; idem, *Paul*, pp. 9-26.

these extremes. Romans is closer to Deissmann's "epistle" category than to his "letter" category, though he called it a "letter" and not a "book."<sup>1</sup>

Letters were not a typical method of religious instruction in Judaism. New Testament letter-writers evidently adopted this method of instruction for two main reasons: As the church grew fast and spread from Jerusalem to many distant places, its leaders needed a method that enabled them to communicate at a distance. Second, letters enabled the apostles to convey a sense of personal immediacy and establish their personal presence with the converts.<sup>2</sup>

### CHARACTERISTICS

The great contribution of this letter to the body of New Testament inspired revelation is its reasoned explanation of how God's righteousness can become the possession of men and women.

"The Epistle to the Romans is the first great work of Christian theology."<sup>3</sup>

"It is the only part of Scripture in which there is found a detailed and systematic presentation of the main features of Christian doctrine."<sup>4</sup>

The Book of Romans is distinctive among Paul's inspired writings in several respects: (1) It was one of the few letters he wrote to churches with which he had had no personal dealings. The only other epistle of this kind was Colossians. (2) It is also a formal treatise within a personal letter. Paul expounded on the gospel in this treatise. He probably did so in this epistle, rather than in another, because the church in Rome was at the heart of the Roman Empire. As such, this church was able to exert great influence in the dissemination of the gospel. (3) For these two reasons Romans is more

---

<sup>1</sup>Ibid., p. 23.

<sup>2</sup>Carson and Moo, p. 331. For further discussion of the literary genre of Romans, see Robert E. Longacre and Wilber B. Wallis, "Soteriology and Eschatology in Romans," *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 41:3 (September 1998):367-82. See also Gordon Fee, "The Genre of New Testament Literature and Biblical Hermeneutics," in *Interpreting the Word of God*, pp. 106-14.

<sup>3</sup>C. H. Dodd, *The Epistle of Paul to the Romans*, p. xiii.

<sup>4</sup>S. Lewis Johnson Jr., *Discovering Romans*, p. 20.

formal and less personal than most of Paul's other epistles. In particular, many students of the book regard 1:18 through 11:36 as a "treatise" or "literary digest" or "letter essay" within the larger letter.<sup>1</sup>

"One feature of the treatise section is the repeated use of diatribe style (dialogue with an imagined interlocutor [responder])—particularly 2:1-5, 17-29; 3:27—4:2; 9:19-21; 11:17-24."<sup>2</sup>

(4) Romans is the longest of Paul's epistles, with 7,114 words in the Greek text. It may have been placed first in the collection of Paul's epistles in the New Testament because of its length, which seems probable, or because of its importance. Paul sent his epistles to churches (Romans through 2 Thessalonians) and to individuals (1 Timothy through Philemon). They do not appear in our New Testaments in their chronological order, but in their size order, in each of the two groupings just mentioned.

"Romans at the head of the Pauline corpus and the Pastoral Epistles at or near the end act as bookends and provide a missional frame around the epistolary collection."<sup>3</sup>

(5) Another characteristic is the unusually large number of Old Testament quotations from and allusions to the Old Testament in Romans.

"Paul quoted more often from the Old Testament in this epistle than in all the other epistles combined. Romans has 61 direct quotations and many more indirect allusions to the Old Testament. Paul draws from at least 14 different books of the Old Testament. Isaiah and Psalms are the most frequently quoted ..."<sup>4</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Dunn, p. lix.

<sup>2</sup>Ibid., p. lxii.

<sup>3</sup>Gregory Goswell, "The Bookends of the Pauline Corpus," *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 65:1 (March 2022):111.

<sup>4</sup>Kenneth G. Hanna, *From Gospels to Glory*, p. 172. See Arnold G. Fruchtenbaum, *The Book of Romans*, pp. 309-10, for a list of references, and pp. 9-15 for discussion of the contribution of Romans to 11 categories of systematic theology.

## THEMES

Dunn regarded the main themes of Romans as: (1) the righteousness of God, and (2) the significance of the law.<sup>1</sup>

"Since the great truth of justification by faith alone is at the heart of Paul's letter to the Roman church, the epistle may come as something of a surprise to modern ecclesiastics [clergymen]. We might have expected the apostle to address believers at Rome, a city crammed with social problems, with a social manifesto or, at the least, a recitation of the primary truths of Christianity in their application to the social problems of the imperial city. Rome was a city of slaves, but Paul did not preach against slavery. It was a city of lust and vice, but he did not aim his mightiest guns at these evils. It was a city of gross economic injustice, but he did not thrust the sword of the Spirit into the vitals of that plague. It was a city that had been erected on and that had fed on and prospered by the violence and rapacity of war, but the apostle did not expatiate on its immorality. Apparently, if we are to judge the matter from a strictly biblical standpoint, Paul did not think that social reform in Rome was 'an evangelical imperative.'<sup>2</sup> The proclamation of the gospel of Jesus Christ solved the crucial and urgent need for the society as a whole and for people in particular. It is still the imperative of the Christian church, and the Christian church will advance only to the extent that its gospel advances."<sup>3</sup>

## VALUE

The Epistle to the Romans is, by popular consent, the greatest of Paul's writings. William Tyndale, the great English reformer and translator, referred to Romans as "the principle and most excellent part of the New Testament." He went on to say the following in his prologue to Romans, which he wrote in the 1534 edition of his English New Testament:

---

<sup>1</sup>Dunn, pp. lxii-lxiii.

<sup>2</sup>"Cf. Claude Thompson, "Social Reform: An Evangelical Imperative," *Christianity Today* (March 26, 1971), 8-12 [588-92]."

<sup>3</sup>Johnson, p. 25.



"No man verily can read it too oft or study it too well; for the more it is studied the easier it is, the more it is chewed the pleasanter it is, and the more groundly [*sic*] it is searched the preciouser [*sic*] things are found in it, so great treasures of spiritual things lieth hid therein."<sup>1</sup>

Martin Luther wrote the following commendation of this epistle:

"[Romans] is worthy not only that every Christian should know it word for word, by heart, but occupy himself with it every day, as the daily bread of the soul. It can never be read or pondered too much, and the more it is dealt with the more precious it becomes, and the better it tastes."<sup>2</sup>

## OUTLINE

- I. Introduction 1:1-17
  - A. Salutation 1:1-7
    - 1. The writer 1:1
    - 2. The subject of the epistle 1:2-5
    - 3. The original recipients 1:6-7
  - B. Purpose 1:8-15
  - C. Theme 1:16-17
- II. The need for God's righteousness 1:18—3:20
  - A. The need of all people 1:18-32
    - 1. The reason for human guilt 1:18
    - 2. The ungodliness of humankind 1:19-27
    - 3. The wickedness of humankind 1:28-32
  - B. The need of good people 2:1—3:8
    - 1. God's principles of judgment 2:1-16
    - 2. The guilt of the Jews 2:17-29

---

<sup>1</sup>Quoted by F. F. Bruce, *The Letter of Paul to the Romans*, p. 9.

<sup>2</sup>Martin Luther, "Preface to the Epistle to the Romans" (1522), quoted by Moo, p. 22.

3. Answers to objections 3:1-8
- C. The guilt of all humanity 3:9-20
- III. The imputation of God's righteousness 3:21—5:21
  - A. The description of justification 3:21-26
  - B. The defense of justification by faith alone 3:27-31
  - C. The proof of justification by faith from the law ch. 4
    1. Abraham's justification by faith 4:1-5
    2. David's testimony to justification by faith 4:6-8
    3. The priority of faith to circumcision 4:9-12
    4. The priority of faith to the promise concerning headship of many nations 4:13-17
    5. The exemplary value of Abraham's faith 4:18-22
    6. Conclusions from Abraham's example 4:23-25
  - D. The benefits of justification 5:1-11
  - E. The restorative effects of justification 5:12-21
- IV. The impartation of God's righteousness chs. 6—8
  - A. The believer's relationship to sin ch. 6
    1. Freedom from sin 6:1-14
    2. Slavery to righteousness 6:15-23
  - B. The believer's relationship to the Law ch. 7
    1. The Law's authority 7:1-6
    2. The Law's activity 7:7-12
    3. The Law's inability 7:13-25
  - C. The believer's relationship to God ch. 8
    1. Our deliverance from the flesh by the power of the Spirit 8:1-11
    2. Our new relationship to God 8:12-17
    3. Our present sufferings and future glory 8:18-25
    4. Our place in God's sovereign plan 8:26-30
    5. Our eternal security 8:31-39

- V. The vindication of God's righteousness chs. 9—11
  - A. Israel's past election ch. 9
    - 1. God's blessings on Israel 9:1-5
    - 2. God's election of Israel 9:6-13
    - 3. God's freedom to elect 9:14-18
    - 4. God's mercy toward Israel 9:19-29
    - 5. God's mercy toward the Gentiles 9:30-33
  - B. Israel's present rejection ch. 10
    - 1. The reason God has set Israel aside 10:1-7
    - 2. The remedy for rejection 10:8-15
    - 3. The continuing unbelief of Israel 10:16-21
  - C. Israel's future salvation ch. 11
    - 1. Israel's rejection not total 11:1-10
    - 2. Israel's rejection not final 11:11-24
    - 3. Israel's restoration assured 11:25-32
    - 4. Praise for God's wise plans 11:33-36
- VI. The practice of God's righteousness 12:1—15:13
  - A. Dedication to God 12:1-2
  - B. Conduct within the church 12:3-21
    - 1. The diversity of gifts 12:3-8
    - 2. The necessity of love 12:9-21
  - C. Conduct within the state ch. 13
    - 1. Conduct towards the government 13:1-7
    - 2. Conduct toward unbelievers 13:8-10
    - 3. Conduct in view of our hope 13:11-14
  - D. Conduct within Christian liberty 14:1—15:13
    - 1. The folly of judging one another 14:1-12
    - 2. The evil of offending one another 14:13-23
    - 3. The importance of pleasing one another 15:1-6
    - 4. The importance of accepting one another 15:7-13

## VII. Conclusion 15:14—16:27

## A. Paul's ministry 15:14-33

1. Past labors 15:14-21
2. Present program 15:22-29
3. Future plans 15:30-33

## B. Personal matters ch. 16

1. A commendation 16:1-2
2. Various greetings to Christians in Rome 16:3-16
3. A warning 16:17-20
4. Greetings from Paul's companions 16:21-24
5. A doxology 16:25-27

**MESSAGE**

Throughout the history of the church, Christians have recognized this epistle as the most important book in the New Testament. The reason for this conviction is that it is an exposition of the gospel of Jesus Christ. Martin Luther called Romans "the chief part of the New Testament and the perfect gospel." Coleridge, the English poet, declared it to be "the most profound work in existence." And Frederick Godet, the French commentator, described it as "the cathedral of the Christian faith."<sup>1</sup>

In order to appreciate the message of this book, it will be helpful first to consider Paul's *presuppositions*. He based these, of course, on Old Testament revelation concerning cosmology and history. "Cosmology" is the study of the nature and principles of the universe.

By the way, there is now what has been called the "new perspective on Paul," which some writers on Paul have advocated in recent years. These scholars believe that "Protestant exegesis for too long allowed a typical Lutheran emphasis on justification by faith to impose a hermeneutical [interpretive] grid on the text of Romans."<sup>2</sup> These scholars believe that the Judaism of Paul's day was not a cold, legalistic "system of earning salvation by the merit of good works, with little or no room for the free forgiveness

---

<sup>1</sup>All three quotations are from Godet, p. 1.

<sup>2</sup>Dunn, p. lxxv.

and grace of God."<sup>1</sup> Rather, "Judaism's whole religious self-understanding was based on the premise of grace."<sup>2</sup>

E. P. Sanders, one advocate of the "new perspective," used the phrase "covenant nomism," by which he meant that, when Paul wrote Romans, he had in mind the role of the law in maintaining the Jews' status as God's chosen people, not as a means of salvation. Some advocates of this view also believe that Paul's Greco-Roman culture influenced the apostle more than his Jewish background and the Old Testament. This has led to some reinterpreting of Paul's writings. Advocates of the "new perspective" include E. P. Sanders, James Dunn, the writer of the Word Biblical Commentary on Romans, N. T. Wright, who has written many books on Pauline theology, and others. Dunn clarified his position further as follows:

"This, then, is the context within which and against which we must set Paul's treatment of the law in Romans. The Jews, proselytes, and God-worshiping Gentiles among his readership could read what Paul says about the law in the light of this close interconnection in Jewish theology of Israel's election, covenant, and law. They would, I believe, recognize that what Paul was concerned about was the fact that covenant promise and law had become too inextricably identified with ethnic Israel as such, with the Jewish people marked out in their national distinctiveness by the practices of circumcision, food laws, and sabbath in particular ([N. T.] Wright appropriately coins the phrase 'national righteousness'). They would recognize that what Paul was endeavoring to do was to free both promise and law for a wider range of recipients, freed from the ethnic constraints which he saw to be narrowing the grace of God and diverting the saving purpose of God out of its main channel—Christ."<sup>3</sup>

Some evangelical scholars have accepted "new perspective" theories, though I have not. The result of the "new perspective" is a departure from traditionally held interpretations of many Pauline texts. The reading that I

---

<sup>1</sup>Ibid.

<sup>2</sup>Ibid.

<sup>3</sup>Ibid., pp. lxxi-lxxi.

have done on this theory has not convinced me that Paul had a "covenant nomistic" view of the law.<sup>1</sup>

Returning to discussion of Paul's presuppositions, he assumed the *God* of the Old Testament. He assumed God's existence and full deity. He believed that God is holy and just. He also held that God is the Creator, Sustainer, and Sovereign Ruler of the universe.

Second, Paul's view of *man* was that he is subject to God's government of the universe. Paul believed that people have received a measure of freedom from God, so they can choose to pursue sin. However, if they do, they are still in the sovereign hand of God. God allows the consequences of their sins to have their effects on them both now and forever. People are also in authority over the rest of the material creation (Gen. 1:28). What humankind has experienced, the material creation also has experienced and reflects as a result of human action.

Third, Paul's view of *history* was that of Old Testament revelation. The important historical events for Paul were those in his Scriptures: the Hebrew Bible, which we call the Old Testament.

Adam was the first man. He rebelled against God's authority. The result was threefold: the practical dethronement of God in the minds of Adam's descendants, the degradation of humanity, and the defilement of creation. This is a very different view of history from what evolutionists and humanists take. Man has lost his scepter, his right to rule, because he rebelled against God's scepter: His right to rule.

Two other individuals were especially significant in history for Paul, as we see in Romans: Abraham, and Jesus Christ. God called Abraham to be a channel of blessing to the whole world. Christ is the greatest blessing. Through Him, people and creation can experience restoration to God's original intention for them.

These are Paul's basic presuppositions on which all of his reasoning in Romans rests.

---

<sup>1</sup>See James E. Allman, "Gaining Perspective on the New Perspective on Paul," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 170:677 (January-March 2013):51-68, for an introduction to and evaluation of the views set forth by Sanders, Wright, and Dunn.

Romans may not be the best biblical book to put in the hands of most unsaved people to lead them to salvation. John is better for that purpose. However, Romans is the best book to put in the hands of a saved person to lead him or her to understand and appreciate their salvation. By the way, "salvation" is an umbrella term: it covers many aspects of deliverance, including justification, sanctification, glorification, redemption, propitiation, et al.<sup>1</sup> These terms will be clarified in the paragraphs that follows.

We turn now to the major *revelations* in this book. These are its central teachings and the emphases that distinguish Romans from other books of the Bible.

First, Romans reveals the tragic helplessness of *the human race*. No other book of the Bible looks so fearlessly into the abysmal degradation that has resulted from human sin. If you read only 1:18 through 3:20, you will become depressed by its pessimism. But if you keep reading, you will conclude, from 3:21 on, that Christians have the best, most wonderful news that anyone has ever heard. This book is all about ruin and redemption. Its first great revelation is the absolute ruin and helplessness of the human race.

Paul divides the ruined race into two parts:

The first of these parts is *the Gentiles* who have the light of nature. God has given everyone, Gentiles and Jews, the opportunity of observing and concluding two things about Himself: His wisdom and power. The average person, as well as the scientist, concludes that Someone wise must have put the natural world together, and He must be very powerful. Nevertheless, having come to that conclusion, people turn from God to vain reasoning, vile passions, unrighteous behavior: envy, murder, strife, deceit, insolence, pride, and perverted conduct. Just listen to today's news and you will find confirmation of Paul's analysis of the human race.

A former student of mine came to Christ by looking through his microscope. He was a research scientist, and he concluded that what he was observing could not have come into existence accidentally. He believed that an intelligent Creator must have been responsible, and this was the first step in his journey toward becoming a Christian. His was not the typical response

---

<sup>1</sup>See Earl D. Radmacher, *Salvation*.

(cf. Matt. 16:17). Most people reject the evidence of God's existence that He has built into His creation even though they see it.

The other part of the ruined race is *the Jews*, who, in addition to the light of nature, also had the light of Scripture. Paul observed that, in spite of his greater revelation and privilege, the Jew behaves the same as the Gentile. Yet he is in one sense a worse sinner. Having professed devotion to God, and having claimed to be a teacher of the Gentiles—because of his greater light—he disobeys God and causes the Gentiles to blaspheme His name.

Paul concluded, "There is no righteous person, not even one" (3:10). "All have sinned and fall short of the glory of God" (3:23).<sup>1</sup>

The second major revelation of Romans is the magnificence of the divine *plan of salvation*. This plan centers on Jesus Christ, whom Paul introduced in the very first sentence of his letter (1:3-4). God declared to everyone that the Jesus of the Gospels is His Son by resurrecting Him from the dead.

Two words describe Christ's relation to the divine plan of salvation: manifestation (display), and propitiation (satisfaction). To "propitiate" means to satisfy the demands of God's righteous standards. The righteousness manifested in Christ is available to people through His propitiation. God's righteousness is available to everyone, because Jesus died as the perfect offering for sin, which satisfied the demands of a holy God completely. The righteousness that we see in Jesus, in the Gospel records, is available to those who believe that His sacrifice satisfied God (3:21, 25).

We can also describe God's relation to the plan of salvation with two words: holiness and love. The plan of salvation that Romans expounds resulted from a holy God reaching out to sinful humanity lovingly (3:22, 24). This plan vindicates the holiness of God as it unveils God's gracious love (chs. 9—11).

The relation of people to the plan of salvation is threefold:

---

<sup>1</sup>Quotations from the English Bible in these notes are from the *New American Standard Bible* (NASB), 2020 edition, unless otherwise indicated.



It involves *justification*: the imputation (ascribing, or crediting) of God's righteousness to the believing sinner. To "justify" means to pardon and forgive sinners of their guilt and to declare them righteous.

"To be justified means to be declared righteous in a judicial sense. This does not mean that the believer, who has been justified, is righteous [in his or her character or conduct]; rather, it means that God declares him to be righteous. Thus, justification has to do with God's declaration concerning the sinner, not with any change occurring within the sinner. Justification does not make anyone holy [in his or her character or conduct]; rather, God declares that the sinner is no longer guilty before Him. It is a divine act in which God declares a sinner righteous as a result of the sinner's faith in Messiah."<sup>1</sup>

"Justification" refers to the legal process by which God declares a person righteous. "Positional sanctification" refers to God's act of setting a person aside for a special purpose. These things happen at the same time when a person trusts in Jesus Christ for his or her salvation.

Salvation also involves *progressive sanctification*: the communication of God's righteousness to the redeemed sinner.<sup>2</sup> Progressive, also called practical, sanctification takes place in a believer when he or she chooses the way of holiness in everyday life. The Holy Spirit motivates and enables the believer to do this. So progressive sanctification is a joint effort, so to speak, in which the believer chooses to follow the leading of the Holy Spirit to do what is right.

Third, salvation involves *glorification*: the perfection of God's righteousness in the believer. In justification, God lifts the sinner into a relationship with Himself that is more intimate than he would have enjoyed if he had never sinned (5:12-21). In progressive sanctification, God progressively transforms the sinner into the Savior's image by the power of the indwelling Holy Spirit. In glorification, God finally restores the sinner to the place that God intended for him to occupy in creation. Justification is entirely God's

---

<sup>1</sup>Fruchtenbaum, p. 43.

<sup>2</sup>J. B. Lightfoot, *Notes on the Epistles of St Paul*, p. 270.

work, progressive sanctification is both God and the believer's work, and glorification is entirely God's work.

The creation's relation to the plan of salvation is twofold: First, God restores creation's king, namely, man, to his intended position. Second, creation realizes all of its intended possibilities that sin has denied it.

Consider next some of the major *lessons* of this book. What did God want us to learn from it?

First, Romans calls us to measure ourselves by divine, rather than human, standards. We sometimes evaluate ourselves, and one another, by using the criteria that our age uses, or that we ourselves set. However, to know our true condition, we must use the criteria that God sets. This standard reveals that we are all guilty before God. This is one of the great lessons that Romans teaches us.

Second, Romans calls us to live by faith, rather than by sight. God did not come any closer to humankind in the incarnation of Christ than He ever had been before. Yet, in the Incarnation, the nearness of God became more obvious to people. In His resurrection, the Son of God became observable as the Son of God to human beings. All the glories of salvation come to us as we believe God. Romans contrasts the folly of trying to obtain salvation by working for it, with trusting God: simply believing what He has revealed as true, and relying on it as true.

Third, Romans calls us to dedicate ourselves to God, rather than living self-centered lives (6:12-13; 12:1). This is the reasonable response to having received salvation as a gift. We should give ourselves to God. God's grace puts us in debt to Him. Paul did not say that if we fail to dedicate ourselves to God, we are therefore unsaved. Rather, he appealed to us as saved people to do for God what He has done for us, namely, give ourselves to Him out of love for Him. When we do this, we show that we truly appreciate what God has done for us.

On the basis of these observations, I would summarize the message of Romans in the following words: Since God has lovingly provided salvation for helpless sinners through His Son, we should accept that sacrifice by faith, and express our gratitude to God by dedicating our lives to Him.

In view of the greatness of the salvation that God has provided, which Romans reveals, Christians, like Paul, have a duty to communicate this good

news to the world (1:14-17; Matt. 28:19). We do this both by lip and life, by explanation and by example (8:29). Our living example will reflect death to self, as well as life to God (6:13).<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Adapted from G. Campbell Morgan, *Living Messages of the Books of the Bible*, 2:1:93-109.

## Exposition

### I. INTRODUCTION 1:1-17

This great epistle begins with a broad perspective. It looks at the promise of a Savior in the Old Testament, reviews Paul's ministry to date, and surveys the religious history of the Gentile world.

"The main body of Romans is a treatise on Paul's gospel, bracketed by an epistolary opening (1:1-17) and conclusion (15:14—16:27). These opening and concluding statements have many similarities, not the least of which is the emphasis on the *gospel*. (Eight of the 11 occurrences in Romans of *euangelion* ["gospel"] and *euangelizomai* ["to evangelize"] are in these passages.) Paul's special relationship to this gospel, a relationship that encompasses the Roman Christians, both opens and closes the strictly 'epistolary' introductory material in the section (vv. 1-5, 13-15)."<sup>1</sup>

"Paul's introduction in 1:1-18 mentions every topic he will discuss in reverse order in the remainder of the letter."<sup>2</sup>

### A. SALUTATION 1:1-7

This salutation, which is the longest salutation in Paul's epistles, identifies the writer (v. 1), introduces the subject of the letter (vv. 2-5), and greets the original readers (vv. 6-7). This salutation is one sentence in the Greek text, and it implicitly sets forth the most fundamental facts of Christianity. In particular, it shows that the main facts of the gospel fulfill Old Testament predictions.

"The central idea of the passage is that of the whole epistle, that the Gospel, as preached by Paul to the Gentiles, was not

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 39. The words in brackets are his, not mine.

<sup>2</sup>John M. Scoggins Jr., "Romans 1:18 as Key to the Structure of the Letter," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 175:700 (October-December 2018):411. See *The Bible Knowledge Commentary: New Testament*, p. 439, for a chart comparing Paul's introductions to his epistles.

inconsistent with, but the fulfilment of, God's promises to Israel."<sup>1</sup>

### 1. The writer 1:1

As in all his epistles, Paul used his Roman rather than his Jewish name, Saul, perhaps because he was an apostle to the Gentiles. Even though he had not yet visited Rome, his readers knew Paul's reputation well. He just needed to give his name to identify himself.

In his relationship to Christ Jesus, Paul was a "bond-servant" (Greek *doulos*; cf. James 1:1; 2 Pet. 1:1; Jude 1). Some translators have rendered this word "slave," but Paul was a willing servant of Christ (cf. Phil. 2:7). This term is the equivalent of the Old Testament "servant of the Lord," which describes Moses, Joshua, Elijah, Nehemiah, and especially David.

"He [Paul] regarded himself as the purchased possession of his Lord and Master. The two ideas of property and service are suggested. There was no serfdom or servility, and yet there was an absolute loyalty in the consciousness of absolute possession. The bond-servant owned nothing, and was nothing, apart from his master. His time, his strength, everything belonged altogether to another. There was nothing nobler to St. Paul than to be a slave of the Lord Jesus. He desired to be nothing, to do nothing, to own nothing apart from Him."<sup>2</sup>

"The principle here is that when Messiah sets a person free from the slavery of sin, the believer does not go from that slavery into the slavery of God. Rather, he moves from the slavery to sin to freedom. At this point, he has the option of binding himself to God. He can become a bondsman, meaning a willing slave of God. This is what Paul will encourage all believers to do in Romans 12:1-2."<sup>3</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>James Denney, "St. Paul's Epistle to the Romans," in *The Expositor's Greek Testament*, 2:585.

<sup>2</sup>Thomas, pp. 38-39.

<sup>3</sup>Fruchtenbaum, p. 22.

"The order of the titles Jesus Christ and Christ Jesus is always significant: 'Christ Jesus' describes the One who was with the Father in eternal glory, and who came to earth, becoming Incarnate; 'Jesus Christ' describes Him as the One who humbled Himself, who was despised and rejected, and endured the cross, but who was afterwards exalted and glorified. 'Christ Jesus' testifies to His pre-existence; 'Jesus Christ' to His resurrection and exaltation."<sup>1</sup>

The title "apostle" gives Paul's gift and office in the church. He was Jesus Christ's special appointee.

"The use of *apostolos* in the NT is less close to its use in classical Greek than it is to the Jewish use of its Hebrew and Aramaic linguistic equivalents, *saliah* and *seliha* respectively, which denote an authorized agent or representative. It is sometimes used in a quite general way of an emissary (e.g. Jn 13:16; 2 Cor 8:23; Phil 2:25); but it is also used as a technical term to denote (i) the Twelve, and (ii) a larger number including Barnabas and Paul (Acts 14:14) and Andronicus and Junia(s) (Rom. 16:7)."<sup>2</sup>

"Paul was a 'called' apostle—*called* is an adjective—he means that he is that kind of an apostle."<sup>3</sup>

"'Called' means designated and set apart by an action of God to some special sphere and manner of being and of consequent activity."<sup>4</sup>

Paul's calling as an apostle gave him the right not only to preach the gospel but to found, to supervise, and even to discipline churches, if necessary. The basis of his authority, the right to his office, was God's calling (cf. vv. 6, 7; Jer. 1:5).<sup>5</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>W. E. Vine, *The Epistle to the Romans*, p. 7.

<sup>2</sup>Cranfield, 1:51-52.

<sup>3</sup>McGee, 4:645.

<sup>4</sup>William R. Newell, *Romans Verse by Verse*, p. 3. Italics omitted.

<sup>5</sup>See R. D. Culver, "Apostles and the Apostolate in the New Testament," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 134:534 (April-June 1977):131-43.

"The Greek word [*aphorismenos*, "set apart"] is not only similar in meaning to, but also has the same consonants as the Hebrew root *p-r-sh*, which underlies the word Pharisee. Paul had been a Pharisee (Phil. iii. 5), supposing himself to be set apart from other men for the service of God; he now truly was what he had supposed himself to be—separated, not, however, by human exclusiveness but by God's grace and election."<sup>1</sup>

"Paul never thought of himself as a man who had aspired to an honour; he thought of himself as a man who had been given a task."<sup>2</sup>

The particular extent of his work, the scope of his calling, was quite narrow, namely, to proclaim "the gospel" (good news) of God. As a Pharisee Paul had lived a life set apart to strictly observing the Mosaic Law and Jewish customs. Now his calling was to proclaim the gospel (Acts 9:15; Gal. 1:12).

"Concentration thus follows consecration and commission."<sup>3</sup>

## 2. The subject of the epistle 1:2-5

1:2 Paul next began to exalt the gospel that God had called him to proclaim. It was a message that God had "promised," not just prophesied, in the Old Testament Scriptures. The words "His" and "holy" stress the unique origin of the gospel. God had inspired the Old Testament by speaking through men as He gave His revelation. Paul did not preach an unanticipated gospel but one that God had promised through His prophets (cf. 4:13-25; 9:4; 15:8). This was the reason that Paul appealed to the Old Testament so fully in this and his other epistles. Specifically, Paul's gospel was not a human invention that tried to make the best of Israel's rejection of Jesus Christ.

---

<sup>1</sup>C. K. Barrett, *A Commentary of the Epistle to the Romans*, p. 17.

<sup>2</sup>Barclay, p. 2.

<sup>3</sup>Thomas, p. 39.

"Paul frequently appealed to the Old Testament in support of his teaching, quoting from it ninety-three times."<sup>1</sup>

1:3-4 Paul identified the gospel's theme in order to exalt it further. The gospel centers on God's Son, Jesus Christ, who was both human and divine. The phrases "according to the flesh" (v. 3) and "according to the Spirit" (v. 4) probably do not contrast the natures of Christ but His relationships.<sup>2</sup> He belonged to two realms or spheres or orders of existence. As to his human earthly connection, His origin was the highest: He was not just an Israelite (9:5) but a descendant of David (Matt. 1:1; Luke 1:32; Acts 13:22-23; 2 Tim. 2:8), which was a messianic qualification (Isa. 11:1).

"The Son did not merely become man but man 'out of David's seed,' which means man as the Messiah. Since he was this promised descendant of David, all the Messianic promises centered in him."<sup>3</sup>

Concerning the realm above, Jesus Christ was higher than the angels (Heb. 1:4), the very Son of God (v. 4). The word "power" probably modifies "the Son" rather than the declaration.<sup>4</sup> Paul probably meant that God declared Jesus to be His powerful Son, rather than that God powerfully declared that Jesus was His Son. The point of this passage is the greatness of Jesus, not the wonder of the resurrection.

"A man who was merely a man and said the sort of things Jesus said would not be a great moral teacher. He would either be a lunatic—on a level with the man who says he is a poached egg—or else he would be the Devil of Hell. You must make

---

<sup>1</sup>George E. Ladd, *A Theology of the New Testament*, p. 394.

<sup>2</sup>James M. Stifler, *The Epistle to the Romans*, pp. 24-25; Bruce, p. 69.

<sup>3</sup>Richard C. H. Lenski, *The Interpretation of St. Paul's Epistle to the Romans*, p. 36.

<sup>4</sup>Johnson, p. 23.



your choice. Either this man was, and is, the Son of God: or else a madman or something worse."<sup>1</sup>

Jesus was always "the Son of God," but the Father declared Him to be "His Son" by resurrecting Him. Jesus did not change in essence—He always was the Son—but was elevated in status and function by His resurrection. God appointed His Son to a new and more powerful position in relation to the world at the Resurrection (cf. Matt. 28:18). He is now not only the Messiah, but the "Lord" (sovereign ruler) over all.<sup>2</sup>

To what does "the Spirit of holiness" (v. 4) refer? It may be another way of referring to the Holy Spirit.<sup>3</sup> On the other hand, in view of the parallel expression "according to the flesh" (v. 3), and the fact that Paul could have said Holy Spirit if that is what he meant, probably Paul was referring to the holy nature of Jesus. Jesus' nature was so holy (perfectly sinless) that death could not hold Him.<sup>4</sup> In this case, "spirit" would be a better translation than "Spirit."

1:5 In this verse Paul probably meant that he had received the special "grace" (unmerited gift) of being an apostle: his "apostleship." He introduced the character and scope of what follows, in this epistle, by linking his apostleship with the resurrected Christ. Jesus' descent from David, plus His resurrection from the dead, proved that He was the same Messiah and Lord that was promised in the Old Testament. Therefore the gospel that Paul preached as an apostle could bring all the Gentiles, not just the Jews, to faith in Christ. It did not bring them to obey the Law of Moses but to "faith" in Christ. Obeying God by trusting in Jesus Christ is "in behalf of His name" in that it glorifies God and Christ.

---

<sup>1</sup>C. S. Lewis, *Mere Christianity*, p. 41.

<sup>2</sup>See S. Lewis Johnson Jr., "The Jesus That Paul Preached," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 128:510 (April-June 1971):120-34.

<sup>3</sup>Godet, p. 80; Bruce, p. 69; John A. Witmer, "Romans," in *The Bible Knowledge Commentary: New Testament*, p. 440.

<sup>4</sup>Henry Alford, *The Greek Testament*, 2:2:313; Everett F. Harrison, "Romans," in *Romans-Galatians*, vol. 10 of *The Expositor's Bible Commentary*, p. 15; Sanday and Headlam, p. 9; Stifler, p. 25; A. T. Robertson, *Word Pictures in the New Testament*, 4:324.

"The law lays down what a man must do; the gospel lays down what God has done."<sup>1</sup>

"Some one has truly said that the Gospel is 'good news' not 'good advice,' ..."<sup>2</sup>

"Faith" is "obedience" to God: "obedience which consists in or springs from faith."<sup>3</sup> God commands everyone to believe in Christ (cf. John 6:29; Acts 17:30-31). To disbelieve in Christ is to disobey God.

"Faith is the act of assent by which the Gospel is appropriated."<sup>4</sup>

This verse is not teaching that saving faith always results in ongoing obedience to God, though that is normally its effect.<sup>5</sup> Both Scripture and experience teach that Christians, those who have exercised saving faith in Christ, often disobey God. Paul's point in this verse is not the obedience of Christians but the obedience of non-Christians who need to obey God by placing their faith in Christ.

### **3. The original recipients 1:6-7**

1:6 Paul assured his readers—the majority of whom were Gentiles (cf. v. 5)—that they were part of those whom God had called for salvation.

"One of the titles of believers is 'the called.'"<sup>6</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Barclay, p. 3.

<sup>2</sup>Thomas, p. 43.

<sup>3</sup>Dunn, p. 24.

<sup>4</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 11.

<sup>5</sup>See Robert N. Wilkin, "Obedience to the Faith: Romans 1:5," *Grace in Focus* 10:6 (November-December 1995):2-4.

<sup>6</sup>Lenski, p. 49.

"God's call is not an invitation but a powerful and effective reaching out to claim individuals for himself."<sup>1</sup>

"In the language of the Acts and Epistles the word 'called' always denotes an effectual [effective] calling, and therefore suggests both the call given by God and obedience to it on the part of believers."<sup>2</sup>

"'Calling' in Paul always includes obedience as well as hearing."<sup>3</sup>

1:7 This verse really continues the thought of verse 1, verses 2 through 6 being somewhat parenthetical. God had called Paul's readers ("all who are beloved of God in Rome") to sainthood, "saints" (holy ones) being a common term for believers in the New Testament. This word refers more to position than condition when used this way, though the implication of holiness in daily living is strong. Christians are primarily saints even though we sin.<sup>4</sup>

"Grace" and "peace" were common salutations in Greek and Jewish letters respectively in Paul's day. God's "grace" is both His unmerited favor and His divine enablement. J. H. Jowett described it as "holy love on the move."<sup>5</sup> God's grace is the basis for any true human peace. The Hebrew concept of "peace" (Heb. *shalom*) did not just mean freedom from stress, anxiety, and irritation. It included the fullness of God's blessing. Paul desired a continually deeper and richer experience of spiritual blessing for his readers. The linking of "the Lord Jesus Christ" with "God our Father" implies the deity of the Son.<sup>6</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Robert H. Mounce, *Romans*, p. 63. See also W. W. Klein, "Paul's Use of *Kaleir*: A Proposal," *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 27 (1984):53-64.

<sup>2</sup>Vine, p. 11.

<sup>3</sup>Denney, 2:587.

<sup>4</sup>See Robert L. Saucy, "'Sinners' Who Are Forgiven or 'Saints' Who Sin?" *Bibliotheca Sacra* 152:608 (October-December 1995):400-12.

<sup>5</sup>Quoted in Horton Davies, *Varieties of English Preaching, 1900 - 1960*, p. 54.

<sup>6</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 16.

The salutation reveals the germ ideas that the writer proceeded to develop later in this epistle. This is also characteristic of Paul's other epistles. So far Paul said he had a message that was in harmony with the Old Testament. It was from the risen Christ, and it was for all people. Furthermore it should lead people to obey God by exercising faith in Jesus Christ.

William Hendriksen provided a list of all 13 salutations with the number of words in the original Greek text in each one:<sup>1</sup>

Romans	93	Philippians	32
Galatians	75	2 Timothy	29
Titus	65	Ephesians	28 (or 30)
1 Corinthians	55	Colossians	28
Philemon	41	2 Thessalonians	27
2 Corinthians	41	1 Thessalonians	19
1 Timothy	32		

### **B. PURPOSE 1:8-15**

Having begun with a formal and unusually long greeting, compared to his other epistles, Paul next proceeded to address his readers more personally. He had not met the Christians to whom he wrote, so he spent some time sharing his heart with them.

"One of the first lessons of effective leadership is the importance of setting priorities. Not only must things be done right (management) but the right things must be done (leadership)."<sup>2</sup>

1:8 Paul felt concern for the welfare of this church. The "faith" of the Roman church had become well known in the few years since it had come into existence (cf. Eph. 1:15-16; Col. 1:3-4;

---

<sup>1</sup>William Hendriksen, *New Testament Commentary: Exposition of the Pastoral Epistles*, p. 339.

<sup>2</sup>Mounce, p. 65. Cf. Cranfield, 1:78-79.

1 Thess. 1:3). Typically Paul began by offering commendation to his readers for some praiseworthy trait whenever he could. Here he thanked God for the Romans Christians in prayer "through Jesus Christ" (i.e., in His name) because their "faith" in God had spread "throughout the world."

"We must express our love to our friends, not only by praying for them, but by praising God for them."<sup>1</sup>

1:9 Paul called God as his witness that he was telling the truth because what he was about to say might be difficult to believe. "In my spirit" means "with my whole heart" (NIV).<sup>2</sup> Paul claimed that he prayed for the Romans unceasingly, namely, frequently—but not without stopping (cf. Eph. 1:15; 3:14; Phil. 1:3-4; Col. 1:3-4; 1 Thess. 1:2-3). The Greek word translated "unceasingly" (*adialeiptos*, cf. 1 Thess. 5:17) denotes that not much time elapsed between his prayers for them. These saints were constantly in his thoughts and prayers.

"We are reminded that the real work of the ministry is prayer. Preaching is more a result of the ministry of prayer than it is a ministry itself. A sermon that does not rise from intense and heart-searching prayer has no chance of bearing real fruit."<sup>3</sup>

1:10 Paul prayed that he might be able come and visit these saints in Rome soon "by the will of God" (i.e., the Lord willing). "At last" indicates that this had been his desire for a long time. One obstacle that may have prevented Paul from reaching Rome previously was the imperial edict of A.D. 49 that expelled Jews from Rome (cf. Acts 18:2).<sup>4</sup>

1:11-13 Paul's reason for planning to visit these Christians was primarily so that he could give them something of spiritual profit ("some

---

<sup>1</sup>Matthew Henry, *Commentary on the Whole Bible*, p. 1754.

<sup>2</sup>NIV refers to *The Holy Bible: New International Version*.

<sup>3</sup>Mounce, p. 66.

<sup>4</sup>See Bruce, p. 16.

spiritual gift"). Paul's spiritual gift to them was probably not one specific gift but anything and everything that would be to their spiritual benefit (cf. 1 Cor. 12:1). In 1 Corinthians 12:1 he mentioned specific gifts (plural). He did not explain what his gift would be, but it would result in their spiritual strengthening ("that you may be established").

1:12 Paul clarified that he wanted to visit them for fellowship, namely, mutual sharing of things profitable. He wanted to receive encouragement from them as well as to give them encouragement. This encouragement would come as they discussed their common "faith."

"Humility is the teacher's best gown. Read again vs. 9 to 12 to see how Paul wears it. ... Said John Ruskin: 'I believe the first test of a truly great man is humility.' And Sir Thomas More: 'To be humble to superiors, is duty; to equals, it is courtesy; to inferiors, is nobleness; it being a virtue that, for all its lowliness commands those it stoops to.' Such was Paul's leadership.<sup>1</sup>"

1:13 The clause "I do not want you to be unaware" always identifies something important that Paul had to say (cf. 1 Cor. 10:1; 12:1; 1 Thess. 4:13). He wanted his readers to know that he had often "planned" to go to Rome but had "been prevented" from doing so—how or by whom he did not say. We should probably interpret the "fruit" that he hoped to obtain broadly rather than specifically. Probably all the fruit that would come from his ministry among them, as well as "among the rest of the Gentiles," is in view.

Paul mentioned his contribution to fellowship with the Romans first (v. 11) and theirs to him last (v. 13) while he stressed reciprocity in between (v. 12).

1:14 Paul's love for Christian fellowship, and his "obligation" to preach the gospel to all people, especially to the Gentiles (cf. Gal. 1:11-12; Eph. 3:1-7; 2 Cor. 12:7-10), motivated him to

---

<sup>1</sup>E. M. Blaiklock, *Today's Handbook of Bible Characters*, pp. 542, 543. Paragraph division omitted.

visit Rome (cf. vv. 1, 5). Having received the grace of God himself, he recognized that this placed him in debt to everyone else. He owed them the opportunity to hear the gospel and to receive God's grace themselves. Every Christian is indebted to every non-Christian, because we possess and can share what can impart life to those who are dead in sin, namely, the gospel.

The terms "Greeks" and "uncultured" distinguish Gentiles by language and culture. In Paul's day, this was a standard way of describing all races and classes within the Gentile world.<sup>1</sup> The Jews spoke of all who were not Jews as "Greeks."<sup>2</sup> But the Greek people spoke of anyone who did not speak the Greek language as a "barbarian." The Greek word *barbaros* is onomatopoeic: it imitates any rough-sounding, unintelligible language.<sup>3</sup> The "wise" and "foolish" distinction divides people intellectually (cf. 1 Cor. 1:19, 20, 26, 27).

1:15 Paul did not regard his opportunity to "preach the gospel" as a burden that he had to bear, or as an unpleasant duty that he had to fulfill. Rather he was "eager" to share the good news with everyone, including the residents of Rome. We should probably understand "the gospel" here in its broadest sense of the whole Christian message, not just the plan of salvation.

"If one has the finest intellectual and formal preparation for preaching but is lacking in zeal, he cannot hope for much success."<sup>4</sup>

The salutation (vv. 1-7) introduced Paul to his readers in a formal tone. However, the explanation of his purpose in desiring to visit Rome (vv. 8-15) revealed a pastoral heart, warm to the readers and the lost, ready to edify the saints and evangelize sinners. Verses 8 through 15 play an

---

<sup>1</sup>Dunn, p. 33.

<sup>2</sup>Robertson, 4:326.

<sup>3</sup>J. P. Lange, "The Epistle of Paul to the Romans," in *Commentary on the Holy Scriptures*, p. 70.

<sup>4</sup>Harrison, p. 18.

integral part in introducing the argument (progression of thought) and rhetoric (persuasive language) of Romans.<sup>1</sup>

"One spiritual lesson that may be learned from this section is that preaching requires the proclamation of the gospel. No one is ever going to be saved by the way believers live. They will only be saved by hearing the content of the gospel. Faith comes by hearing and hearing by the Word of God (Rom. 10:17). Hence, the gospel must be proclaimed."<sup>2</sup>

### C. THEME 1:16-17

If anyone thought that Paul had not visited Rome because he doubted the power of his gospel to work in that sophisticated environment, the apostle now clarified his reason for not coming (cf. v. 13). These verses conclude the introduction and they transition into the body of the letter by stating Paul's theme, which he proceeded to develop in the body of the epistle. They also summarize Paul's theology as a whole.<sup>3</sup>

1:16 Paul's third basic attitude toward the gospel now comes out. Not only did he feel "under obligation" (v. 14) and "eager" (v. 15) to proclaim it, but he also felt unashamed to do so (cf. 2 Tim. 1:8-12). This is an example of the figure of speech called litotes, in which one sets forth a positive idea (I am proud of the gospel) by expressing its negative opposite ("I am not ashamed of the gospel"). The reason for using this figure of speech is to stress the positive idea.

"The gospel" does not announce that everyone is safe because of what Jesus Christ has done, which is universalism. The gospel is only effective in those who believe it.<sup>4</sup> Believe what exactly? Believe the good news. What is the good news? It is the news that Jesus is the Christ (i.e., the Messiah, Savior,

---

<sup>1</sup>See Marty L. Reid, "A Consideration of the Function of Rom 1:8-15 in Light of Greco-Roman Rhetoric," *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 38:2 (June 1995):181-91.

<sup>2</sup>Fruchtenbaum, p. 35. Cf. 1 Cor. 1:21.

<sup>3</sup>Barrett, p. 27.

<sup>4</sup>See J. Ronald Blue, "Untold Billions: Are They Really Lost?" *Bibliotheca Sacra* 138:562 (October-December 1981):338-50; and Ramesh P. Richard, "Soteriological Inclusivism and Dispensationalism," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 151:601 (January-March 1994):85-108.



whom God promised to send) and that He has done everything necessary to save us from the wrath of God (cf. 1 John 2:2; 5:1). Note that Paul mentioned no other condition besides believing the good news in this crucial verse (cf. 4:5). He said nothing about our having to do anything in addition, such as undergoing baptism, joining a church, pledging total commitment, etc. The issue is believing good news and trusting Christ. Either a person does or does not do so.<sup>1</sup>

"The only way to a right relationship with God is to take God at His word, and to cast oneself, just as one is, on the mercy and the love of God. It is the way of faith. It is to know that the important thing is, not what we can do for God, but what God has done for us. For Paul the centre of the Christian faith was that we can never earn or deserve the favour of God, nor do we need to. The whole matter is a matter of grace, and all that we can do is to accept in wondering love and gratitude and trust what God has done for us. But that does not free us from obligations or entitle us to do as we like; it means that for ever and for ever we must try to be worthy of the love which does so much for us. But there is a change in life. We are no longer trying to fulfil [*sic*] the demands of stern and austere and condemnatory law; we are not like criminals before a judge any more; we are lovers who have given all life in love to the one who first loved us."<sup>2</sup>

The reason for Paul's proud confidence in the gospel was that the gospel message has tremendous "power."

"We shall not do wrong if we think of the Gospel as a 'force' in the same kind of sense as that in

---

<sup>1</sup>See Thomas L. Constable, "The Gospel Message," in *Walvoord: A Tribute*, pp. 201-17.

<sup>2</sup>Barclay, p. xxvi.

which science has revealed to us the great 'forces' of nature."<sup>1</sup>

"Like the word of God in the prophets, the Gospel itself is a power which leads either to life or to death (cf. I Cor. i. 23 f.; 2 Cor. ii. 15 f.)."<sup>2</sup>

The Greek word translated power is *dunamis*, from which the word "dynamite" comes. Consequently some interpreters have concluded that Paul was speaking of the explosive, radical way in which the gospel produces change in individual lives and even in history. However the context shows that the apostle was thinking of its intrinsic ability to affect change.

"The late evangelist Dwight L. Moody commented that the gospel is like a lion. All the preacher has to do is to open the door of the cage and get out of the way!"<sup>3</sup>

God has the power to deliver physically (Exod. 14:13) and spiritually (Ps. 51:12, 14). The basic outcome of "salvation" is soundness or wholeness. Salvation restores people to what they cannot experience because of sin. Salvation is an umbrella term; it covers all aspects of deliverance. The terms justification, redemption, reconciliation, sanctification, and glorification describe different aspects of salvation.<sup>4</sup>

"The inherent glory of the message of the gospel, as God's life-giving message to a dying world, so filled Paul's soul, that like his blessed Master, he "despised the shame." So, pray God, may all of us!"<sup>5</sup>

The gospel has a special relevance to "the Jew." We could translate "first" (Gr. *protos*) as "preeminently" (cf. 2:9-10). This preeminence is due to the fact that God chose the Jews

---

<sup>1</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 23.

<sup>2</sup>Barrett, p. 28.

<sup>3</sup>Mounce, p. 70.

<sup>4</sup>Definitions of these and other theological terms will follow in these notes.

<sup>5</sup>Newell, p. 18. He did not identify the source of his quotation.

to be the people through whom the gospel would reach the Gentiles (non-Jews; cf. Gen. 12:3). As a people the Jews have a leading place in God's plans involving salvation for the rest of humanity (cf. chs. 9—11). Their priority is primarily elective—God chose them first—though it was also historical and methodological.<sup>1</sup>

Because God purposed to use Israel as His primary instrument in bringing blessing to the world (Exod. 19:5-6), He gave the Jews the first opportunity to receive His Son. This was true both during Jesus' earthly ministry (John 1:11) and following His ascension (Acts 1:8; 3:26). Paul also followed this pattern in his ministry (Acts 13:45-46; 28:25, 28).<sup>2</sup>

Despite her privileged position of priority, Israel must repent of her rejection of her Messiah, Jesus Christ, before Christ's earthly millennial (1,000-year) kingdom will begin (Zech. 12:10).<sup>3</sup> Meanwhile, the Great Commission makes no distinction between Jews and Gentiles ("Greeks") in the present age. Jesus Christ has charged Christians with taking the gospel to everyone (Matt. 28:19-20). He has identified no group as that to which we must give priority in evangelism.

By the way, when a distinction is made in Scripture between Jews and Greeks, as here, the distinction is between two parts of the human race culturally. When the distinction is between Jews and Gentiles, the distinction is racial.

1:17 In this verse Paul explained what he meant when he said that when a person believes the gospel he or she is saved (v. 16). What makes the gospel powerful is its content as God uses it. The salvation (deliverance) that God has provided and offers is in keeping with His righteous character (cf. 1 Cor. 1:30; 2 Cor. 5:21).

---

<sup>1</sup>See Wayne A. Brindle, "'To the Jew First': Rhetoric, Strategy, History, or Theology?" *Bibliotheca Sacra* 159:634 (April-June 2002):221-33.

<sup>2</sup>See Jim R. Sibley, "Israel and the Gospel of Peter, Paul, and Abraham," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 173:689 (January-March 2016):18-31.

<sup>3</sup>See Stanley D. Toussaint and Jay A. Quine, "No, Not Yet: The Contingency of God's Promised Kingdom," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 164:654 (April-June 2007):145-46.

What did Paul mean by "the righteousness of God"? With the exception of 2 Corinthians 5:21, Paul used this phrase only in Romans, where it appears eight times (1:17; 3:5, 21, 22, 25, 26; 10:3 [twice]). It could be a moral attribute of God, either His rectitude (uprightness) or His faithfulness. It could be a legal status that God gives to people. It could be both of these things.<sup>1</sup> Or it could be an activity of God, specifically, His saving action.

"For Paul, as in the OT, 'righteousness of God' is a relational concept. Bringing together the aspects of activity and status, we can define it as *the act by which God brings people into right relationship with himself.*"<sup>2</sup>

The gospel reveals the righteousness of God.

What does "from faith to faith" mean? Was Paul describing the way that God has revealed His righteousness, or how people should receive it? The position of this phrase in the sentence favors the first option. The idea might be that God's righteousness comes from one person who exercises faith to another person who exercises faith. Still, if that is what Paul intended, he should have used the Greek preposition *apo*, which views "from" as a point of departure. Instead he used *ek*, which indicates the basis of something (cf. 3:16; 5:1; Gal. 2:16).

Probably the phrase refers to how people receive God's righteousness. The idea seems to be that faith is the method whereby we receive salvation, whatever aspect of salvation may be in view, and whomever we may be. The NIV interpretation is probably correct: "by faith from first to last."

"Faith is the starting point, and faith the goal."<sup>3</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 25.

<sup>2</sup>Moo, p. 74. See pages 70-74 for the reasons that this is the best conclusion. He also wrote a good excursus on "'Righteousness' Language in Paul," pp. 79-90.

<sup>3</sup>Lightfoot, p. 250.

"... man (if righteous [right before God] at all) is righteous by faith; he also lives by faith."<sup>1</sup>

Another view is that "from faith to faith" means "from God's faithfulness (to His covenant promises) to man's response of faith."<sup>2</sup> A third view is that it refers to both the deepening of faith in an individual and to the spreading of it in the world.<sup>3</sup>

Every aspect of God's salvation comes to us only by faith. That is true whether we are speaking of justification (past salvation from the penalty of sin), progressive sanctification (present salvation from the power of sin), or glorification (future salvation from the presence of sin).

"It [faith] is the 'Yes' of the soul when the central proposition of Christianity is presented to it."<sup>4</sup>

The words of Habakkuk 2:4 support Paul's statement. Faith is the vehicle that brings the righteousness of God to people. The person who believes the good news that the righteous God has proclaimed becomes righteous himself or herself in the sight of God. The Pharisees, one of which Paul had been, taught that righteousness came through keeping the Mosaic Law scrupulously (cf. Matt. 5:20). The gospel that Paul proclaimed, on the other hand, was in harmony with what Habakkuk had revealed (cf. v. 2). Martin Luther wrote the following about this verse:

"Night and day I pondered until I saw the connection between the justice of God and the statement that 'the just shall live by his faith.' Then I grasped that the justice of God is that righteousness by which through grace and sheer mercy God justifies us [declares us righteous] through faith. Thereupon I felt myself to be reborn and to have gone through open doors into paradise. The whole of Scripture took on a new

---

<sup>1</sup>Barrett, p. 31.

<sup>2</sup>Dunn, p. 48.

<sup>3</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 28

<sup>4</sup>Idem., p. 26.

meaning, and whereas before the 'justice of God' had filled me with hate, now it became to me inexpressibly sweet in greater love. This passage of Paul became to me a gate to heaven."<sup>1</sup>

Many students of Romans believe that Habakkuk 2:4 is the "text" of Romans, and that what follows is exposition of that Scripture text.

"Here we have the *text* of the whole Epistle of Romans: First, the words 'the gospel'—so dear to Paul, as will appear. Next, the universal saving power of this gospel is asserted. Then, the secret of the gospel's power—the revelation of God's righteousness on the principle of faith. Finally, the accord of all this with the Old Testament Scriptures: 'The righteous shall live by faith.'"<sup>2</sup>

Thomas suggested the following outline of Romans: 1:1—3:20: the righteous; 3:21—4:25: by faith; and 5:1—16:26: shall live.<sup>3</sup>

Verses 16-17 are the key verses in Romans because they state the theme of the revelation that follows. Paul's message was the gospel. He felt no shame declaring it but was eager to proclaim it because it was a message that can deliver everyone who believes it from God's wrath. It is a message of how a righteous God righteously makes people righteous. The theme of the gospel is the righteousness of God, and the theme of Romans is the gospel.<sup>4</sup>

This first section of Romans (1:1-17) introduces the subject of this epistolary treatise by presenting the gospel as a message that harmonizes with Old Testament revelation. It is a message that concerns Jesus, the Messiah and Lord. It is a powerful message since it has the power to save anyone who believes it.

---

<sup>1</sup>Martin Luther, quoted in Roland H. Bainton, *Here I Stand*, pp. 49-50. See also J. H. Merle D'Aubigné, *The Story of the Reformation*, pp. 63-64.

<sup>2</sup>Newell, p. 18.

<sup>3</sup>Thomas, p. 63.

<sup>4</sup>Moo, pp. 22-30; Witmer, p. 437.

## II. THE NEED FOR GOD'S RIGHTEOUSNESS 1:18—3:20

Paul began his explanation of the gospel by demonstrating that there is a universal need for it. Every human being needs to hear it and respond to it by trusting in Jesus Christ because everyone lacks the righteousness that God requires before He will accept us. Paul showed that everyone is a sinner and is therefore subject to God's condemnation.

"... we cannot seriously aspire to him [i.e., God] before we begin to become displeased with ourselves."<sup>1</sup>

Paul began by demonstrating the spiritual need of all people generally (1:18-32). Then he dealt more particularly with people who would resist this verdict, namely, self-righteous people (2:1—3:8). He explained three principles by which God will judge everyone (2:1-16). Then he zeroed in on the hardest of all cases: the Jews (2:17-29). He answered four objections the Jews might raise to God's condemnation of them (3:1-8). Finally, he supported the fact that all people are under God's condemnation by citing Old Testament Scripture (3:9-20). All of this shows that everyone needs to hear the gospel and to believe it (1:16-17).

"Paul implicitly acknowledges that 1:18—3:20 is an interruption in his exposition of the righteousness of God by reprising [repeating] 1:17 in 3:21 ... Some think that the 'revelation of God's wrath' is a product of the preaching of the gospel, so that 1:18—3:20 is as much 'gospel' as is 3:21—4:25 ... But, although Paul clearly considers warning about judgment to come to be related to his preaching of the gospel (2:16), his generally positive use of 'gospel' language forbids us from considering God's wrath and judgment to be *part of* the gospel. We must consider 1:18—3:20 as a preparation for, rather than as part of, Paul's exposition of the gospel of God's righteousness."<sup>2</sup>

McGee called this section "sinnerama."<sup>3</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>John Calvin, *Institutes of the Christian Religion*, 1:1:1.

<sup>2</sup>Moo, p. 92. Paragraph division omitted.

<sup>3</sup>McGee, 4:652.

## A. THE NEED OF ALL PEOPLE 1:18-32

Perhaps Paul began by showing the need of all people for God's righteousness because he was an apostle to the Gentiles, and his Roman readers were primarily Gentiles. His argument in 1:18 through 3:20 moves inward through a series of concentric circles of humanity: all people (1:18-32), self-righteous people (2:1-16), the Jews (2:17-29).

"God never condemns without just cause. Here three bases are stated for His judgment of the pagan world.

- a. For suppressing God's truth (1:18) ...
- b. For ignoring God's revelation (1:19-20) ...
- c. For perverting God's glory (1:21-23) ..."<sup>1</sup>

### 1. The reason for human guilt 1:18

In this verse Paul began to explain why all people need to hear the gospel and experience salvation. Whereas this verse gives one reason, it also serves as a general statement that summarizes all human guilt.

God has "revealed" His "wrath" as well as His righteousness (v. 17) from heaven.<sup>2</sup> The moral devolution of humanity is not just a natural consequence of people sinning. It is also a result of God's punishment of sinners. The final judgment of sin will occur in the eschaton (end times), but already God is pouring out His wrath against sin to a lesser degree (cf. Eph. 5:6; Col. 3:6).<sup>3</sup> Paul described "wrath" as "revealed from heaven" because it comes from God who is in heaven.<sup>4</sup>

"God's wrath is his divine displeasure with sin. We call it 'wrath' because it shares certain basic characteristics of human wrath. But because it is God's wrath it can have none of the sinful qualities of its analogical counterpart."<sup>5</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Witmer, p. 442.

<sup>2</sup>Cranfield, 1:109-10.

<sup>3</sup>See René A. López, "The First [*sic*] Epistle of Paul the Apostle to the Romans," in *The Grace New Testament Commentary*, 2:627-28, 636; idem, "Do Believers Experience the Wrath of God?" *Journal of the Grace Evangelical Society* 15:29 (Autumn 2002):45-66.

<sup>4</sup>G. Dalman, *The Words of Jesus*, p. 219. See the excursus on the wrath of God in Romans in Newell, pp. 40-46.

<sup>5</sup>Mounce, pp. 76-77.



"Ungodliness" means lack of reverence for God. Man's neglect of God and rebellion against God are evidences of ungodliness. "Unrighteousness" or "wickedness" (NIV) means injustice toward other human beings, doing what is not right in God's sight. We see unrighteousness in any attitude or action that is not loving. Together these two words show humankind's failure to love God and other people as we should, which are our two greatest responsibilities (Deut. 6:5; Lev. 19:18; Matt. 22:37-39). Unrighteousness proceeds from ungodliness. The order of the words is significant: failure in the religious (or spiritual) sphere leads to failure in the moral (or physical) sphere. Verses 19 through 27 demonstrate man's ungodliness, and verses 28 through 32 show his unrighteousness (wickedness). "The truth" refers to truth that people know about God (cf. v. 25). They suppress this truth by their wickedness.

"... whenever the truth starts to exert itself and makes them feel uneasy in their moral nature, they hold it down, suppress it. Some drown its voice by rushing on into their immoralities; others strangle the disturbing voice by argument and by denial."<sup>1</sup>

Even if someone acknowledges God for who He is, he still does not honor God as much as he should. Every person suppresses the revelation of God, and approves of those who practice evil, to some extent.

## 2. The ungodliness of humankind 1:19-27

Verse 18 identifies people's ungodliness and unrighteousness as the targets of God's wrath. Some people are more ungodly and unrighteous than others, but all are ungodly and unrighteous.

1:19-20 These verses begin a discussion of "natural revelation." Verse 19 states the fact of natural revelation, and verse 20 explains the process.<sup>2</sup> "Natural revelation" describes what everyone knows about God because of what God has revealed concerning Himself in nature.<sup>3</sup> It is truth about God that is immediately obvious to every normal human being. Paul was

---

<sup>1</sup>Lenski, pp. 92-93.

<sup>2</sup>Witmer, p. 442.

<sup>3</sup>See Robert L. Thomas, *Evangelical Hermeneutics*, ch. 5: "General Revelation and Biblical Hermeneutics," pp. 113-40.

not referring to the truth that man has been able to discover through various disciplines of study (e.g., botany, biology, zoology, etc.). What God has revealed about Himself in Scripture is "special revelation." The creation bears testimony to its Maker, and every human being is aware of this silent witness (cf. Ps. 19).<sup>1</sup> That is, it is observable, not necessarily audible.

"Napoleon, on a warship in the Mediterranean on a star-lit night, passed a group of his officers who were mocking at the idea of a God. He stopped, and sweeping his hand toward the stars, said, 'Gentlemen, you must get rid of those first!'"<sup>2</sup>

Four things characterize natural revelation: First, it is a clear testimony; everyone is aware of it. It is "evident" (v. 19). Second, everyone can understand it. We can draw conclusions about the Creator from His creation. "His invisible attributes ... have been clearly perceived" (v. 10) is an oxymoron (a figure of speech in which apparently contradictory terms appear together). Third, this revelation has gone out "since the creation of the world" in every generation (v. 10). Fourth, it is a limited revelation in that it does not reveal everything about God (e.g., His love and grace) but only some things about Him, specifically, "His eternal power and divine nature" (v. 10).

"This is the only New Testament instance of *theiotes*, 'divinity', 'divine nature' (NIV). If God's divinity is shown in creation, his full deity or divine essence (*theotes*) is embodied in Christ (Col. 2:9)."<sup>3</sup>

Natural revelation tells people that there is a Supreme Being, and it makes them responsible to respond to their Creator in worship and submission.<sup>4</sup> However, it does not give sufficient

---

<sup>1</sup>See Bruce A. Baker, "Romans 1:18-21 and Presuppositional Apologetics," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 155:619 (July-September 1998):280-98.

<sup>2</sup>Newell, p. 29.

<sup>3</sup>Bruce, p. 80.

<sup>4</sup>See Ronald E. Mann, "False and True Worship in Romans 1:18-25," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 157:625 (January-March 2000):26-34.

information for people to experience salvation from their sins. That is why everyone needs to hear the gospel.

"If people could be saved without ever hearing the gospel, the worst thing one could do would be to send a missionary to them. Why give them the chance to reject the gospel and end up in hell if they can get to heaven simply by not hearing the gospel?"<sup>1</sup>

"Utter uncompromising, abandonment of hope in *man* is the first preliminary to understanding or preaching the gospel."<sup>2</sup>

Paul did not explain exactly how God reveals Himself in nature, and there have been three popular explanations: One is that He left behind clues or tracks in creation from which everyone can reason that there is a Creator. Another explanation is that God personally reveals His presence to everyone through the medium of creation. Still another view is that everyone has a vague awareness of God because we recognize that we are finite creatures living in a world that is subject to change. None of these views is demonstrably certain, and all of them have problems. More than one may be true.<sup>3</sup> But there is no question that God has revealed Himself in nature.<sup>4</sup>

"The being of God may be apprehended [perceived], but cannot be comprehended [fully understood]. Finite understandings cannot perfectly know an infinite being; but, there is that which may be known."<sup>5</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Fruchtenbaum, p. 46.

<sup>2</sup>Newell, p. 27.

<sup>3</sup>For a discussion of them with arguments for the third one, see Richard Alan Young, "The Knowledge of God in Romans 1:18-23: Exegetical and Theological Reflections," *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 43:4 (December 2000):695-707.

<sup>4</sup>See F. W. Grant, *Spiritual Law in the Natural World*, for this writer's explanation of how God's revelations in Scripture and nature harmonize.

<sup>5</sup>Henry, p. 1755.

1:21 Our primary duties to God, in view of His self-revelation in nature, are to "honor Him as God" and to "give" Him "thanks." When people reject truth it becomes increasingly difficult for them to recognize and accept truth.

"... in their *religion*, they deposed God from His place as Creator,—in their *lives*, they were ungrateful by the abuse of His gifts."<sup>1</sup>

1:22 "They followed foolishness (*ta mataia*) and became foolish (*mataioi*) themselves."<sup>2</sup>

"Whenever human wisdom sets itself against God, the result is soon seen in human foolishness."<sup>3</sup>

"Man is not improving physically, morally, intellectually, or spiritually. The pull is downward. Of course this contradicts all the anthologies of religion that start with man in a very primitive condition as a caveman with very little intellectual qualities and move him up intellectually and begin moving him toward God. This is absolute error. Man is moving away from God, and right now the world is probably farther from God than at any time in its history."<sup>4</sup>

1:23 Mythology and idolatry have resulted from man's need to identify some power greater than himself and his refusal to acknowledge God as that power. Men and women have elevated themselves to God's position (cf. Dan. 2:38; 3:1; 5:23). The "image in the form of corruptible mankind" may include both literal physical images and idealized concepts of mankind. In our day humanism (the belief system that attaches prime importance to human rather than divine or supernatural matters) has replaced the worship of individual human leaders in most developed countries. People have descended to the worship of "animals," even reptiles ("crawling creatures"), as

---

<sup>1</sup>Alford, 2:2:323.

<sup>2</sup>Lightfoot, p. 252.

<sup>3</sup>Griffith Thomas, *St. Paul's Epistle ...*, p. 69.

<sup>4</sup>McGee, 4:653.

well (cf. Ps. 106:20). This is perhaps more characteristic of third-world countries.

There seem to be seven steps down into degradation in verses 21b-23b. Some interpreters do not see a progression but simply seven characteristics. These are (1) not honoring God as God, (2) not giving Him thanks, (3) becoming ineffective in their reasonings, (4) having their hearts darkened, (5) becoming fools, (6) glorifying man, (7) and worshiping animals.

"This tragic process of human 'god-making' continues apace in our own day, and Paul's words have as much relevance for people who have made money or sex or fame their gods as for those who carved idols out of wood and stone."<sup>1</sup>

"They [i.e., many unbelievers] will not say it is by chance that they are distinct from brute creatures. Yet they set God aside, the while using 'nature,' which for them is the artificer [inventor] of all things, as a cloak. They see such exquisite workmanship in their individual members from mouth and eyes even to their very toenails. Here also they substitute nature for God."<sup>2</sup>

Note the allusions to the creation story in the threefold division of the animal kingdom in this verse: "birds, four-footed animals, and crawling creatures."<sup>3</sup>

Certainly there have been a few individuals who have responded properly to general revelation when they have been enabled by God's Spirit to do so. Missionaries to primitive people occasionally come back home with stories about how some tribe had been praying for God to give them more light and God sent them a missionary. But Paul's point was that rejection, rather than acceptance, is typical of humanity

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 110. For a relevant exposition of verses 21-22, see Francis A. Schaeffer, *Death in the City*, pp. 79-123.

<sup>2</sup>Calvin, 1:5:4.

<sup>3</sup>See also James M. Howard, "Re-examining Roman 1—8 with the Pentateuch," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 177:705 (January-March 2020):70-90.

unaided by God Himself. By himself fallen man does not respond to general revelation.

"When good is omitted, there always comes in its place an evil committed."<sup>1</sup>

God has revealed Himself in two basic ways: The first is through general revelation (in nature, Ps. 19:1-6; Rom. 1:18-21; in providence [normal human affairs], Dan. 2:21; Matt. 5:45; Acts 14:15-17; and in the human conscience, Rom. 2:14-15). The second is through special revelation (in Scripture, 2 Tim. 3:16-17; 2 Pet. 1:21; and in Christ, John 1:18; 5:36-37; 6:63; 14:10).<sup>2</sup>

1:24 The false religions that people have devised, and to which Paul just referred, constitute some of God's judgment on humankind for turning from Him. False religion is not in any sense good for humankind. It is what people as a whole have chosen, but it is also a judgment from God, and it tends to keep people so distracted that they disregard the true God.

"God's wrath mentioned in Romans 1 is not an active outpouring of divine displeasure but the removal of restraint that allows sinners to reap the just fruits of their rebellion."<sup>3</sup>

God's wrath is active in another sense, however. "God gave people up" (cf. vv. 26, 28) by turning them over to the punishment that their crimes earned, like a judge deals with a criminal (cf. Hos. 4:17).

"... it is not that God permitted rebellious people to fall into uncleanness and bodily dishonor; he actively, although justly in view of their sin, consigned them to the consequences of their acts."<sup>4</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Godet, p. 105.

<sup>2</sup>Paul P. Enns, *The Moody Handbook of Theology*, pp. 157, 186-87.

<sup>3</sup>Mounce, p. 80.

<sup>4</sup>Johnson, *Discovering Romans*, p. 35. Cf. Moo, p. 111; and Acts 7:42.

"If the patient will not submit to the methods prescribed, but willfully does that which is prejudicial to him, the physician is not to be blamed. The fatal symptoms that follow are not to be imputed to the physician, but to the disease itself and to the folly of the patient."<sup>1</sup>

"Two facts must be noticed here. (1) This delivering up, this hardening the heart, is the second stage in the downward fall, not the first, in the language of Scripture. The first is in the man's own power. (2) This is not represented as a negative result of God's dealings, not as a permissive act, a passive acquiescence on His part. There is a stage in the downward course when by God's law sin begets more sin and works out its own punishment in the degradation of the whole man. Thus there are moral laws of God's government just as there are physical laws."<sup>2</sup>

The third characteristic of humankind in rebellion against God that Paul identified—after ignorance (v. 21) and idolatry (v. 23)—is "impurity." Here Paul evidently had natural forms of moral uncleanness in view such as adultery and prostitution. He went on in verses 26 and 27 to describe even worse immorality, namely, unnatural acts such as homosexuality. "Natural" here means in keeping with how God has designed people, and "unnatural" refers to behavior that is contrary to how God has made us.

1:25 People exchanged "the truth of God" (cf. v. 18) for "falsehood" (lit. "the lie"). The lie in view is that we should venerate someone or something in place of the true God (cf. Gen. 3:1-5; Matt. 4:3-10). Paul's concluding doxology ("Creator, who is blessed forever. Amen.") underlined this folly.

---

<sup>1</sup>Henry, p. 1756.

<sup>2</sup>Lightfoot, p. 254.

"The doxology expresses the horror of the Apostle at this dishonour, and puts their sin in a more striking light."<sup>1</sup>

"Fetish worship produces fetish morality."<sup>2</sup>

"It was the greatest honour God did to man that he made man in the image of God; but it is the greatest dishonour man has done to God that he has made God in the image of man."<sup>3</sup>

1:26-27 Because people exchanged the truth for this falsehood, God "gave them over" to degrade themselves through their "passions." The result was that people "exchanged natural relations" for what is unnatural. In the Greek text, the words translated "women" (*thelus*, v. 26) and "men" (*arsen*, v. 27) mean "females" and "males." Ironically the homosexuality described in these verses does not characterize females and males of other animal species—only human beings.

"Notice the words Paul uses to describe lesbianism and homosexuality: 'degrading,' 'unnatural,' 'indecent.' Even though homosexuals and lesbians say that such conduct is not degrading or unnatural, that does not change the character of these sins in God's eyes. Lesbianism and homosexuality are in themselves wrong."<sup>4</sup>

"Until 1973 homosexuality was on the American Psychiatric Association's list of mental disorders, but it was removed that year. Defenders of the movement tell us that homosexuality should no longer be considered a deviant lifestyle but rather an alternative lifestyle. It has even been compared

---

<sup>1</sup>Alford, 2:2:324.

<sup>2</sup>Lightfoot, p. 254.

<sup>3</sup>Henry, p. 1755.

<sup>4</sup>Charles C. Ryrie, *Biblical Answers to Tough Questions*, p. 148.



to left-handedness in an effort to make it morally neutral and therefore acceptable."<sup>1</sup>

Homosexuality is a perversion because it uses sex for a purpose contrary to those for which God created and intended it (Gen. 1:28; 2:24).

"This need not demand the conclusion that every homosexual follows the practice in deliberate rebellion against God's prescribed order. What is true historically and theologically is in measure true, however, experientially."<sup>2</sup>

AIDS, for example, is probably a general consequence of man's rebellion against God like other diseases are, rather than a special judgment from God. The "due penalty of their error" is what people experience as a result of God giving them over and letting them indulge their sinful desires (cf. 6:23).

"Sin comes from the mind, which perverts the judgment. The effect of retribution [repayment] is to abandon the mind to that depravity."<sup>3</sup>

"Contemporary homosexuals insist that these verses mean that it is perverse for a heterosexual male or female to engage in homosexual relations but it is not perverse for a homosexual male or female to do so since homosexuality is such a person's natural preference. This is strained exegesis unsupported by the Bible. The only natural sexual relationship the Bible recognizes is a heterosexual one (Gen. 2:21-24; Matt. 19:4-6) within marriage."<sup>4</sup>

"A contextual and exegetical examination of Romans 1:26-27 reveals that attempts by some

---

<sup>1</sup>Ibid., p. 143.

<sup>2</sup>Harrison, p. 25.

<sup>3</sup>Henri Maurier, *The Other Covenant*, p. 185.

<sup>4</sup>Witmer, pp. 443-44. See P. Michael Ukleja, "Homosexuality in the New Testament," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 140:560 (October-December 1983):350-58.

contemporary writers to do away with Paul's prohibitions against present-day same-sex relations are false. Paul did not impose Jewish customs and rules on his readers; instead he addressed same-sex relations from the trans-cultural perspective of God's created order. God's punishment for sin is rooted in a sinful reversal of the created order. Nor was homosexuality simply a sin practiced by idolaters in Paul's day; it was a distorting consequence of the fall of the human race in the Garden of Eden. Neither did Paul describe homosexual acts by heterosexuals. Instead he wrote that homosexual activity was an exchange of the created order (heterosexuality) for a talionic [equal in kind] perversion (homosexuality), which is never presented in Scripture as an acceptable norm for sexuality. Also Hellenistic pederasty [sexual activity involving a man and a boy] does not fully account for the terms and logic of Romans 1:26-27 which refers to adult-adult mutuality. Therefore it is clear that in Romans 1:26-27 Paul condemned homosexuality as a perversion of God's design for human sexual relations."<sup>1</sup>

"Paul's attitude to homosexual practice is unambiguous. ... sex treated as an end in itself becomes a dead end in itself, and sexual perversion is its own inevitable penalty."<sup>2</sup>

"A man cannot be delivered up to a greater slavery than to be given up to his own lusts."<sup>3</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>David E. Malick, "The Condemnation of Homosexuality in Romans 1:26-27," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 150:599 (July-September 1993):340. See also Sherwood A. Cole, "Biology, Homosexuality, and Moral Culpability," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 154:615 (July-September 1997):355-66; J. Kirby Anderson, *Moral Dilemmas*, ch. 13: "Homosexuality;" and Darrell L. Bock and Mikel Del Rosario, "The Table Briefing: Sexuality and Paul's Transcultural Message in Romans 1:18-32," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 172:686 (April-June 2015):222-28.

<sup>2</sup>Dunn, p. 74.

<sup>3</sup>Henry, p. 1756.

### 3. The wickedness of humankind 1:28-32

1:28 In the Greek text there is a wordplay that highlights God's just retribution. As people disapproved of the idea of retaining God in their thinking, so God gave them over to a disapproved ("depraved") mind. This letting loose has led to all kinds of sinful behavior.

"People who have refused to acknowledge God end up with minds that are 'disqualified' from being able to understand and acknowledge the will of God. The result, of course, is that they do things that are 'not proper.' As in 1:21, Paul stresses that people who have turned from God are fundamentally unable to think and decide correctly about God and his will. This tragic incapacity is the explanation for the apparently inexplicable failure of people to comprehend, let alone practice, biblical ethical principles. Only the work of the Spirit in 'renewing the mind [*nous*]' (Rom. 12:2) can overcome this deep-seated blindness and perversity."<sup>1</sup>

"A mind which is reprobate, worthless, useless, is unable to fulfill its natural functions as designed by God; it confuses right and wrong, failing to distinguish what is pleasing to Him from what is displeasing."<sup>2</sup>

1:29-31 The second key word in verse 18, "unrighteousness," reappears at the head of this list of humankind's sinful practices. It is a general word describing the evil effects in human relations that people's suppression of the knowledge of God produces. "Unrighteousness" ("wickedness," NIV) is whatever is contrary to what is right or just. "Wickedness" ("evil," NIV) is what is vile and sinister. "Greed" is the drive to obtain more. "Evil" ("depravity," NIV) describes resident moral evil. "Insolent" focuses on activities, "arrogant" on thoughts,

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 118.

<sup>2</sup>Vine, p. 25.

and "boastful" on words.<sup>1</sup> Most of the rest of these characteristics need no clarification.<sup>2</sup>

"Insolent [v. 30]. Greek *hybristes*, one who behaves with humiliating and unconscionable arrogance to those who are not powerful enough to retaliate."<sup>3</sup>

1:32 The final step down in human degradation is people's approval of "those who practice" wickedness. It is bad to practice these things, but it is even worse to encourage others to practice them. Approving of wicked behavior does not necessarily mean promoting it. By not acting against it one can give tacit approval to an action.

"In such cases not only is the voice of conscience stifled, but the mind has become absolutely callous regarding the moral degradation and ruin of others, and takes pleasure in their sinfulness."<sup>4</sup>

"Granted that commending evil is not, in the ultimate sense, worse than doing it, it is also true that in a certain respect the person who commits a sin under the influence of strong temptation is less reprehensible than the one who dispassionately agrees with and encourages a sin for which he or she feels no strong attraction him- or herself."<sup>5</sup>

"The Stoic recognition of what is proper, in accord with good order, constitutes evidence for Paul that man generally (not just the Jew) knows what is right, knows it in fact (or in effect) to be the

---

<sup>1</sup>Richard C. Trench, *Synonyms of the New Testament*, pp. 93-97.

<sup>2</sup>See René A. López, "A Study of Pauline Passages with Vice Lists," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 168:671 (July-September 2011):301-16.

<sup>3</sup>Bruce, p. 81.

<sup>4</sup>Vine, p. 27.

<sup>5</sup>Moo, p. 122.

requirement of God, and knows that to flout it is to court death, a death justly deserved."<sup>1</sup>

This is the longest list of vices in the New Testament. Its purpose is to show the scope of social evils that result when God hands people over to a depraved mind after they have refused to acknowledge Him. See 13:13; Matthew 15:19; 1 Corinthians 5:10-11; 6:9-10; 2 Corinthians 12:20-21; Galatians 5:19-21; Ephesians 4:31; 5:3-5; Colossians 3:5, 8; 1 Timothy 1:9-10; 2 Timothy 3:2-5; and 1 Peter 4:3 for other vice lists.

Paul's use of the past tense in verses 18 through 32 suggests that he was viewing humanity historically. Nevertheless his occasional use of the present tense shows that he observed many of these conditions in his own day. He was viewing humankind as a whole, not that every individual has followed this general pattern of departure from God. One expositor labeled the four stages in man's tragic devolution that Paul explained as follows: intelligence (vv. 18-20), ignorance (vv. 21-23), indulgence (vv. 24-27), and impenitence (vv. 28-32).<sup>2</sup>

### **B. THE NEED OF GOOD PEOPLE 2:1—3:8**

In the previous section (1:18-32) Paul showed that humankind is condemned for refusing to respond appropriately to natural (general) revelation. In this one (2:1—3:8) his subject is more people's failure to respond to special revelation. Since the Jews had more knowledge of this revelation than the Gentiles, they are primarily in view throughout this chapter, though they are not named until verse 9.<sup>3</sup> As in the previous section, specific accusations follow general terms for sin (cf. 1:18 with 1:23, 26-32; and 2:1-16 with 2:17-29).

---

<sup>1</sup>Dunn, p. 76.

<sup>2</sup>Warren W. Wiersbe, *The Bible Exposition Commentary*, 1:518-19. For another exposition of 1:18-32 see J. Dwight Pentecost, *Pattern for Maturity*, pp. 52-59. He also offered expositions of 6:11-23 (2); 7:1-14; 8:1-8; 8:1-13; 12:1-21; 14:1-13; 14:13-23; 14:22—15:3; and 15:1-7 in this volume.

<sup>3</sup>Denney, 2:595.

Arnold Fruchtenbaum believed that Paul had in mind the uncultured Gentiles in 1:18 through 32 and the cultured Gentiles in 2:1 through 16—following his division of the Gentiles into "Greeks" and "uncultured" in verse 14.<sup>1</sup>

Paul addressed those people who considered themselves exceptions to humankind's general sinfulness in this section of the epistle. Obviously many people could say in his day—and even more say in ours—that they are not as bad as the people Paul described in chapter 1. The writer dealt with this objection more generally in 2:1 through 16 and more specifically about Jewish objections in verses 17 through 29.

"Paul has still his statement in view, that the Gospel is the only power of God for salvation, and nothing to be ashamed of. If Judaism can save men, the Gospel is an impertinence; hence the radical failure of the Jew must be shown."<sup>2</sup>

"Chapter 1 reveals the unrighteousness of man, and chapter 2 reveals the self-righteousness of man."<sup>3</sup>

"In chap. 2 ... it is the second person singular, 'you,' that Paul uses in making his accusation (2:1-5, 17-29). This does not mean that Paul is now accusing his readers of these things; were he to do that, the second person plural would have been needed. Rather, Paul utilizes here, and sporadically throughout the letter, a literary style called *diatribe*. Diatribe style, which is attested in several ancient authors as well as elsewhere in the NT (e.g., James), uses the literary device of an imaginary dialogue with a student or opponent. Elements of this style include frequent questions, posed by the author to his conversation partner or by the conversation partner, emphatic rejections of possible objections to a line of argument using *me genoito* ('May it never be!'), and the direct address of one's conversation partner or opponent."<sup>4</sup>

"It often becomes easier to follow Paul's arguments if the reader imagines the apostle face to face with a heckler, who makes interjections and receives replies which sometimes are

---

<sup>1</sup>Fruchtenbaum, p. 44.

<sup>2</sup>Stifler, p. 36.

<sup>3</sup>McGee, 4:655.

<sup>4</sup>Moo, p. 125.

withering and brusque. It is by no means impossible that some of the arguments in Romans first took shape in this way, in the course of debates in synagogue or market place."<sup>1</sup>

### 1. God's principles of judgment 2:1-16

Before showing the guilt of moral and religious people before God, specifically the Jews (vv. 17-29), Paul set forth the principles by which God will judge everyone (vv. 1-16). By doing so he warned the self-righteous—Gentiles and Jews alike. These are principles by which God judges, not principles by which He saves.

2:1 "Therefore" seems more logically to relate back to 1:18 and 19 than to 1:21 through 32. Paul addressed those people who might think they were free from God's wrath because they had not practiced the sins to which Paul had just referred (1:29-32). The apostle now warned them that they had indeed practiced the same things. He seems to have been thinking as Jesus did, when our Lord corrected His hearers' superficial view of sin (e.g., Matt. 5—7). Evil desires constitute sin as well as evil actions.

"God is saying that by the same token that you have the right to judge other people by your standards, He has the right to judge you by His standards."<sup>2</sup>

2:2 The first principle by which God judges is that He judges righteously ("rightly," or lit. "is according to truth against"). He judges on the basis of what really exists, not what merely appears to be. For example, someone might assume that since his immoral thoughts are not observable he is free of guilt. But God looks at the heart. Consequently those who have practiced the same sins as those listed previously, though perhaps not in the same way, should not think that they will escape judgment.

---

<sup>1</sup>Barrett, p. 43.

<sup>2</sup>McGee, 4:656.

2:3-4 Rather than acting like judges of the outwardly immoral, these (self-righteous) people should view themselves as sinners subject to God's judgment. They should not misinterpret the fact that God may not judge them quickly as an indication that they are blameless. They should realize that God is simply giving them time to repent (v. 4; cf. Jer. 18:6-11; 2 Pet. 3:9).<sup>1</sup>

"Repentance plays a surprisingly small part in Paul's teaching, considering its importance in contemporary Judaism. Probably this is because the coming of Christ had revealed to Paul that acceptance with God requires a stronger action than the word 'repentance' often connoted at the time."<sup>2</sup>

This is the only occurrence of the Greek word *metanoia*, translated "repentance," in Romans. (A different Greek word, *ametameletos*, appears in 11:29 and has been translated "without repentance" in some English versions. The NASB translation has "irrevocable.")

"The more light we sin against the more love we sin against."<sup>3</sup>

2:5 God's "wrath" is increasing against sinners while He waits to judge. Each day that the self-righteous person persists in his self-righteousness God adds more guilt to his record. God will judge him one day (cf. Rev. 20:11-15). That "day of wrath" will be the day when God pours out His wrath on every sinner and the day when people will perceive His judgment as righteous. This judgment is in contrast to the judgment that the self-righteous person passes on himself when he considers himself guiltless (v. 1).

---

<sup>1</sup>See Glenn R. Kreider and Thomas M. Mitchell, "Kindness and Repentance: Romans 2:4 and Ministry to People with Same-Sex Attraction," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 173:689 (January-March 2016):57-79.

<sup>2</sup>Moo, p. 134.

<sup>3</sup>Henry, p. 1757.



"God's anger stored up in heaven is the most tragic stockpile a man could lay aside for himself."<sup>1</sup>

2:6 The second principle by which God judges is that He will deal with what every person really did. He will not deal with what people intended or hoped or wanted to do (cf. Ps. 62:12; Matt. 16:27; et al.).

"A man's destiny on Judgment Day will depend not on whether he has known God's will but on whether he has done it."<sup>2</sup>

2:7-8 Paul probably meant that if people obey God *perfectly* ("those who by perseverance in doing good") they will receive "eternal life." Those who do not obey God *perfectly* receive God's "wrath and indignation." Later he would clarify that no one can obey God *perfectly* so all are under His wrath (3:23-24).<sup>3</sup>

Another view is that eternal life is not only a free gift but it is also a reward for good deeds.<sup>4</sup> On the one hand, we obtain eternal life as a gift only by faith (3:20; 4:5; cf. John 3:16; 5:24; 6:40; Eph. 2:8; Titus 3:5). However in another sense, as Christians, we experience eternal life to the extent that we do good deeds (cf. 6:22; Matt. 19:29; Mark 10:30; Luke 18:29-30; John 10:10; 12:25-26; 17:3; Gal. 6:8). According to this view Paul's point was this: Those who are self-righteous and unbelieving store up something that will come on them in the future, namely, wrath. Likewise those who are humble and believing store up something that will come on them in the future, namely, glory, honor, and peace. Paul was speaking of the believer's rewards here.<sup>5</sup>

Other interpreters believe Paul meant that a person's perseverance demonstrates that his heart is regenerate.<sup>6</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Mickelsen, p. 1188.

<sup>2</sup>A. M. Hunter, *The Epistle to the Romans*, p. 36. Cf. Matt. 25:31-46.

<sup>3</sup>Moo, pp. 139-42. Cf. Bruce, p. 85.

<sup>4</sup>E.g., *The Nelson Study Bible*, p. 1881.

<sup>5</sup>Vine, p. 32. See Joseph C. Dillow, *The Reign of the Servant Kings*, pp. 28, 135-45.

<sup>6</sup>E.g., Witmer, p. 445; and Cranfield, 1:147.

However, that is not what Paul said here even though this statement is true. He said those who persevere will receive eternal life.

2:9-10 The point of these verses is that the true basis of judgment is not whether one is a Jew or a Greek, or whether that person was outwardly moral or immoral. It is rather what one actually did that determines whether he or she is truly moral or immoral. God will deal with "the Jew first" because his privilege was greater: He received special revelation from God (in the Scriptures) in addition to natural revelation.

"It is not possible to draw a clear distinction between *psuche* (soul [v. 9]) and *pneuma* (spirit). *Psuche* is from *psucho*, to breathe or blow, *pneuma* from *pneo*, to blow. Both are used for the personality and for the immortal part of man. Paul is usually dichotomous in his language, but sometimes trichotomous in a popular sense. We cannot hold Paul's terms to our modern psychological distinctions."<sup>1</sup>

2:11 The third principle by which God judges is that He will treat everyone evenhandedly. There is equal justice for all ("no partiality") in God's court.

"Justice is blindfolded, not because she is blind, but that she may not see men in either silk or rags; all must appear alike."<sup>2</sup>

Verses 6-11 contain one unit of thought. Note the chiasmic structure of this passage:<sup>3</sup>

- A "[God] will repay each person according to his deeds." (v. 6)
- B "to those who by perseverance in doing good seek glory, honor, and immortality, He will give eternal life." (v. 7)

---

<sup>1</sup>Robertson, 4:392-93.

<sup>2</sup>McGee, 4:658.

<sup>3</sup>A chiasmus is a rhetorical or literary figure in which words, grammatical constructions, or concepts are repeated in reverse order in the same or a modified form.

- C "but to those who are self-serving and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, He will give wrath and indignation." (v. 8)
- C' "There will be tribulation and distress for every soul of man who dies evil ..." (v. 9)
- B' "but glory, honor, and peace for everyone who does what is good ..." (v. 10)
- A' "For there is no partiality with God." (v. 11)

However, in this chiasmus, the emphasis is not on the central element, as is common, but on the beginning and the end, namely, that God will judge everyone equitably and impartially on the basis of their works.

2:12 The Gentiles do not have "the" Mosaic "Law" in the sense that God did not give it to them. He gave it to the Jews. Therefore He will not judge Gentiles by that Law. He will judge them for rejecting the natural revelation of Himself that they have. The Jews in Paul's day did have the Law, and God would judge them by it (v. 12).<sup>1</sup>

"That completely answers the teaching that the mercy of God covers in some way the heathen world and that the heathen are not lost."<sup>2</sup>

2:13 It is not hearing the Law that makes a person acceptable to God but doing what it commands. "Justified" is a legal term that is suitable in this discussion of law observance. Justification is a legal verdict. It reflects a person's position under the Law. The "justified" person is one whom God sees as "righteous" in relation to His Law (cf. Deut. 25:1). The justified person is not necessarily blameless; he may have done things that are wrong. Nevertheless in the eyes of the law (God's justice) he is not culpable (blameworthy). He does not have to pay for his crimes.

---

<sup>1</sup>See Jeffrey S. Lamp, "Paul, the Law, Jews, and Gentiles: A Contextual and Exegetical Reading of Romans 2:12-16," *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 42:1 (March 1999):37-51.

<sup>2</sup>Arno C. Gaebelin, *The Annotated Bible*, 3:2:17.

"To be justified is to be *declared righteous* by God, not to be *made righteous* by God."<sup>1</sup>

Paul said that God would declare righteous the person who did not just hear the Mosaic Law but did what it required. The Law warned that anything short of perfect obedience to it—even reading or studying it or hearing it preached and taught—made a person guilty before God (Deut. 27:26; cf. Gal. 3:10). Moses therefore urged the Israelites not to rely on their own righteousness for acceptance by God but to rely on Him (e.g., Deut. 18:15).<sup>2</sup>

2:14 Even Gentiles who do not have the Mosaic Law know that they should do things that are right and not do things that are wrong. Right and wrong are the basic concerns of the Mosaic Law. Paul did not mean that Gentiles are indifferent to any law except what they invent in their own self-interest ("a law to themselves"). He meant that they have a law that is instinctive, namely, an intuitive perception of what is right and what is wrong. All people have this. One writer sought to explain what Paul did not explain, namely, how human beings can and do know God's moral law apart from special revelation.<sup>3</sup>

"... Paul never distinguishes between 'ritual law' and 'moral law' [when he refers to the Mosaic Law] ..."<sup>4</sup>

2:15 In addition to this innate sense of morality, Gentiles also have consciences. The New Testament presents the human conscience as a computer-like tool. It has no pre-programmed data in it, but whatever a person experiences programs his or her conscience. If he learns that lying is wrong, for example, his conscience will from then on bring that information to his mind in appropriate situations.

---

<sup>1</sup>Johnson, *Discovering Romans*, p. 27.

<sup>2</sup>See Calvin, 3:14:13.

<sup>3</sup>See Mark D. Mathewson, "Moral Intuitionism and the Law Inscribed on Our Hearts," *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 42:4 (December 1999):629-43.

<sup>4</sup>Barrett, p. 51.

Therefore some individuals who grow up in cultures that value a particular practice that other cultures abhor, such as deception or treachery, have "no conscience" about being deceptive or practicing treachery. All people grow up learning that some things that are truly bad are bad, and other things that are truly good are good. Thus our conscience, while not a completely reliable guide, is helpful as we seek to live a morally consistent life.<sup>1</sup>

"... in Romans it [the conscience] is a witness (so here, also ix. 1; cf. 2 Cor. i. 12). This is in accord with the etymology of the word. It implies man's ability to detach himself from himself and to view his character and actions independently. He is thus able to act as a witness for or against himself."<sup>2</sup>

The New Testament speaks of a good conscience (Acts 23:1; 1 Tim. 1:5, 19; 1 Pet. 3:16, 21), a clear conscience (Acts 24:16; 1 Tim. 3:9; 2 Tim. 1:3; Heb. 13:18), a guilty conscience (Heb. 10:22), a corrupt conscience (Titus 1:15), a weak conscience (1 Cor. 8:7, 10, 12), and a seared conscience (1 Tim. 4:2).

"... when men have an awareness of divine judgment adjoined to them as a witness which does not let them hide their sins but arraigns them as guilty before the judgment seat—this awareness is called 'conscience.'"<sup>3</sup>

2:16 This verse completes Paul's earlier argument that God will judge impartially (vv. 11-13), and it forms the end of the inclusio dealing with judgment that began with verses 1 through 5.<sup>4</sup> Verses 14 and 15 are somewhat parenthetical in

---

<sup>1</sup>See C. A. Pierce, *Conscience in the New Testament*, and Roy B. Zuck, "The Doctrine of Conscience," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 126:504 (October-December 1969):329-40.

<sup>2</sup>Barrett, p. 53.

<sup>3</sup>Calvin, 4:10:3.

<sup>4</sup>An inclusio is a literary device based on a concentric principle, also known as bracketing, bookending, or an envelope structure, which consists of creating a frame by placing similar material at the beginning and end of a section.

the flow of Paul's argument. They qualify his statement that the Gentiles have no law (v. 12). In verse 16, his point is that God's impartial judgment will include people's secret thoughts as well as their overt acts. Both thoughts and actions therefore constitute "deeds" (v. 6). "Christ Jesus" will be God's agent of judgment (cf. Acts 17:31). "According to my gospel" means that the gospel Paul preached included the prospect of judgment. Throughout this section (vv. 1-16), the judgment of unbelievers (i.e., the Great White Throne judgment, Rev. 20:11-15) is in view.

In summary, in order to convict any self-righteous person of his guilt before God, Paul reminded his readers of three principles by which God will evaluate all people. He will judge righteously, in terms of reality, not just appearance (v. 2). He will judge people because of their deeds, what they actually do, both covertly and overtly (v. 6). Moreover, He will judge impartially, not because of how much or how little privilege they have enjoyed but how they responded to the truth that they had (v. 11).

This last principle has raised a question for many people. Will God condemn someone who has never heard the gospel of Jesus Christ if he or she responds appropriately to the limited truth that he or she has? Paul later showed that no one responds appropriately to the truth that he or she has (3:23). All fail, so all stand condemned. He also made it very clear that it is impossible to experience salvation from sin without trusting in Jesus Christ (1:16-17; 10:9; cf. John 14:6). That is why Jesus gave the Great Commission and why the gospel is so important (1:16-17).

"... Paul agreed with the Jewish belief that justification could, in theory, be secured through works. Where Paul disagreed with Judaism was in his belief that the power of sin prevents any person, even the Jew who depends on his or her covenant status, from actually achieving justification in that manner. While, therefore, one could be justified by doing the law in theory, in practice it is impossible ..."<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 155.

## 2. The guilt of the Jews 2:17-29

Even though the Jews had the advantages of receiving the Mosaic Law and the covenant of circumcision, their pride and self-sufficiency offset these advantages. Even divinely revealed religion is no substitute for trust and obedience toward God. Verses 17 through 29 are similar to 1:18 through 32. In 2:17 through 29 Paul showed that Jews in particular are guilty before God just as he formerly proved all humanity guilty. In both sections he pointed out that people knew the truth but rejected it and consequently became guilty of idolatry, sensuality, and immorality.

Why did Paul "pick on" the Jews? He did so because they were the most self-righteous people and therefore the least willing to admit their sinfulness and their need for salvation. He wrote what he did not because he hated the Jews but because he loved them and wanted them to be saved (cf. 9:1-3; 10:1).

"In the previous section Paul addressed his Jewish readers in a relatively restrained manner. But here the mood changed. Once again he employed the diatribe style that he used in the opening verses of chap. 2. His tone became quite severe as he laid out before them the absolute necessity of bringing their conduct into line with their profession. From this point on to the end of the second major division (Rom 3:20), we hear Paul the preacher convincing his listeners of their need for a different kind of righteousness. Although in another letter he claimed that his preaching was not eloquent (1 Cor 2:1-5), it is hard to deny that here in Romans we are dealing with the dynamic rhetoric of an evangelist bent on persuasion."<sup>1</sup>

"Paul here claims for the Jew nothing more than what the Jews of his day were claiming for themselves; every item on the list in vv. 17-20 is paralleled in Jewish literature of the time."<sup>2</sup>

Paul had been speaking of Jews in verses 9 through 13. They are included in the larger category of "good" (self-righteous) people in verses 1 through 16. But now he addressed them as the most self-righteous of the self-

---

<sup>1</sup>Mounce, pp. 97-98.

<sup>2</sup>Moo, p. 159.

righteous. Paul explained the basis of their boast of being righteous in the following verses.

2:17        The name "Jew" contrasts with the name "Greek" and calls attention to culture and nationality.<sup>1</sup> The Jews gloried in being members of God's chosen nation (cf. Exod. 19:5-6). They relied on the Mosaic Law as the path to salvation because God Himself had given it to Moses on Mt. Sinai. They boasted in their knowledge of God that they had obtained through that Law.

"To glory in God means to find one's highest treasure in God and to manifest this."<sup>2</sup>

2:18        The Jews also had a very precise understanding of what is more and less important to God (cf. Phil. 1:10). They looked down on non-Jews as those who needed their guidance even though, as Paul pointed out earlier, the Gentiles have some light and law themselves.

"The Jew believed that everyone was destined for judgment except himself. It would not be any special goodness which kept him immune from the wrath of God, but simply the fact that he was a Jew."<sup>3</sup>

Having referred to God's gifts to the Jews, "the Law" and the knowledge of God (v. 17), Paul then turned to the superior capabilities that these gifts conferred on them: They knew "His will" and could identify what is of most importance "being instructed from the Law."

2:19-20    Finally, Paul mentioned the role that the Jews somewhat pretentiously gloried in playing: God had called them to enlighten the Gentiles with these gifts and capabilities.<sup>4</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 64.

<sup>2</sup>Lenski, p. 180.

<sup>3</sup>Barclay, p. 35.

<sup>4</sup>Godet, p. 128.



"Paul is considering the Jewish moralist, and the business of every moralist is the reformation of others."<sup>1</sup>

"It was the custom of the Jews to take a great deal of pains in teaching their children, and all their lessons were *out of the law*, it were well if Christians were but as industrious to teach their children *out of the gospel*."<sup>2</sup>

2:21-24 With a series of rapier-like interrogations (rhetorical questions) Paul proceeded to poke holes in the Jews' hypocritical façade.

"Here is the 'Thou art the man' which we have been expecting since ver. 1."<sup>3</sup>

Some interpreters have concluded that it was not uncommon for Jews to rob the temples of the pagan Gentiles (v. 22; cf. Acts 19:37).<sup>4</sup> The Jews may have done this by using the precious metals from idolatrous articles stolen from pagan temples (cf. Deut. 7:26). By doing so, they betrayed their own idolatry, which was love of money. Paul probably did not mean that they robbed temples by withholding their temple dues.<sup>5</sup> Rather than staying away from what they professed to abhor, the Jews went after (worshipped) pagan "idols." The Jews' Gentile neighbors saw their inconsistency and despised ("blasphemed") Yahweh because of it (v. 24). They were saying in effect: If the Jews behave this way, what a bad God they must have (since they follow His example).

Other interpreters believe that Paul was not claiming that the Jews literally and typically practiced theft, adultery, and sacrilege. In fact, the Jews were known by their Gentile neighbors as living by higher ethical standards than they did. What Paul meant was that, when these sins are properly understood (i.e., as involving coveting, lusting, and idolatry),

---

<sup>1</sup>Lenski, p. 183.

<sup>2</sup>Henry, p. 1758.

<sup>3</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 66.

<sup>4</sup>E.g., Fruchtenbaum, p. 75.

<sup>5</sup>Denney, 2:600.

Jews as well as Gentiles were guilty of all three of them (cf. Matt. 5:21-48).<sup>1</sup>

The Jews did not apply their own teaching to themselves. Paul backed up his claim with a quotation from Isaiah 52:5 (v. 24).

"The greatest obstructors of the success of the word are those whose bad lives contradict their good doctrine, who in the pulpit preach so well that it is a pity they should ever come out, and out of the pulpit live so ill that it is a pity they should ever come in."<sup>2</sup>

2:25-27 Next to the Mosaic Law, the Jews boasted almost equally in their "circumcision". Most of the Jews in Paul's day believed that God would not permit any observant Jew to enter hell.

"R. [Rabbi] Levi said; In the Hereafter Abraham will sit at the entrance to Gehenna, and permit no circumcised Israelite to descend therein. What then will he do to those who have sinned very much? He will remove the foreskin from babes who died before circumcision and set it upon them [the sinners], and then let them descend into Gehenna ..."<sup>3</sup>

Another rabbinic view was that God will send an angel who stretches (as if to cut) the foreskin of great sinners, and then they descend into Gehenna.<sup>4</sup> The Jews believed that circumcision guaranteed their acceptance by God provided they did not sin very much (like some Christians believe that water baptism guarantees salvation). Paul reminded such people that reality is more important than profession, and obedience is more vital than testimony. Circumcision would not

---

<sup>1</sup>Barrett, pp. 56-57.

<sup>2</sup>Henry, p. 1758.

<sup>3</sup>Midrash Rabbah, *Genesis*, 1:409-10. Cf. *Genesis Rabbah*, trans. Jacob Neusner, 2:182. The Midrash is an ancient commentary on part of the Hebrew Bible (our Old Testament) attached to the biblical text.

<sup>4</sup>Midrash Rabbah, *Exodus*, pp. 234-35.

shield them from God's wrath if they failed to do all that He commanded.

"... in contrast to Jewish teachers, who held that only a radical decision to renounce the covenant invalidated one's circumcision, Paul argues that simple transgression of the law can have the same effect."<sup>1</sup>

"In the Greek this second part of verse 25 is interesting: 'If you are a lawbreaker, your circumcision has become a foreskin.'"<sup>2</sup>

In our day cans and bottles have labels on them to indicate what is inside. Circumcision was a label, and it implied that the Jew was obedient to God. However, if he was not completely obedient, the label was not only worthless but misleading. The contents of a can are more important than the label on the can. Similarly, if a Gentile was completely obedient to God, the absence of the label of circumcision was not of major consequence. The Jews had put more emphasis on the presence of the label (circumcision) than on the contents of the can (the Jew). Paul's point was that disobedience brings condemnation, and perfect obedience theoretically brings salvation, regardless of whether one is a Jew or a Gentile.

"Israel's neighbours for the most part practiced circumcision (the Philistines were a notorious exception); but the circumcision of Israel's neighbours was not a sign of God's covenant, as Israelite circumcision was intended to be."<sup>3</sup>

The reference to "the letter" of the Law" (v. 27) indicates that the Jews had the Mosaic Law written down. In this verse and the next two, Paul was contrasting two types of Jews, not Jews and Christians.

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 169.

<sup>2</sup>Witmer, p. 447.

<sup>3</sup>Bruce, p. 89.

2:28-29 We now discover a second reason that Paul chose to address his fellow Israelites as "Jews" in this section (vv. 17-29). Not only was "Jew" a title that non-Jews used to describe Israelites, but the word "Jew" comes from the name "Judah," which means "praise." Paul was saying that the person who truly praises God is not one who merely wears the label of circumcision (is a Jew) but one who really obeys God. Such a person has a circumcised "heart" (cf. Deut. 30:6; Jer. 4:4; 9:25-26; Ezek. 44:9). Heart circumcision is a spiritual operation that the Holy Spirit performs, not a physical operation that conformed to the letter of the Mosaic Law. The truly obedient person will not only praise God by being obedient, but God will also praise him. He will not just receive the praise of men for his obedience to God, but God will praise him as well.

"These verses [vv. 25-29] must be kept in their context, which is that Paul is dealing with Jews and making a distinction between Jews who believe and Jews who do not believe. He is not teaching that every Gentile Christian is a spiritual Jew. Rather, he is teaching that every Jew is not a full Jew. A completed Jew is one who has had both circumcisions, the circumcision of the flesh, which is outward in obedience to the Abrahamic covenant, and an inward circumcision of the heart as an act of obedience to the new covenant."<sup>1</sup>

In verses 17 through 29 Paul's point was that obedience to God is more important than religious privilege. Even though the Jews boasted in outward matters, the Law and circumcision, they were guilty of failing God inwardly, as were the Gentiles. Actually a God-fearing, obedient Gentile was more pleasing to God than a God-fearing, disobedient Jew, because God delights in obedience.

---

<sup>1</sup>Arnold G. Fruchtenbaum, "Israel and the Church," in *Issues in Dispensationalism*, pp. 128-29. See also Alva J. McClain, *Romans: The Gospel of God's Grace*, p. 86; and Robert L. Saucy, *The Case for Progressive Dispensationalism*, pp. 195-98.

### 3. Answers to objections 3:1-8

In chapter 2 Paul showed that God's judgment of all people is determined by character and behavior rather than knowledge, heritage, or ritual. He put the Jew on the same level as the Gentile regarding their standing before God. Yet God Himself also made a distinction between Jews and Gentiles. In 3:1 through 8 Paul dealt with that distinction. He did this so that there would be no question in the minds of his Jewish readers that they were guilty before God and needed to trust in Jesus Christ. This passage affirms the continuing faithfulness of God to His covenant people, but it clarifies that His faithfulness in no way precludes His judging sinful Jews.

"In thus allowing the Roman Christians to 'listen in' on this dialogue, Paul warns his mainly Gentile audience that they should not interpret the leveling of distinctions between Jew and Gentile in terms of God's judgment and salvation as the canceling of all the privileges of Israel."<sup>1</sup>

3:1 Paul asked four rhetorical questions in this section (vv. 1-8), questions that could have been in the mind of a Jewish objector. Probably Paul was simply posing these questions and objections to himself in order to clarify his view for his readers. This is, again, the diatribe style of rhetoric. The words "then what" (Gr. *ti oun*) appear in Romans to raise questions about what Paul has taught in order to advance his argument (cf. 3:9; 4:1; 6:1, 15; 7:7; 8:31; 9:14, 19, 30; 11:7).

We could paraphrase the first question as follows: If Jews and Gentiles are both guilty before God, then what advantage is there in being a Jew? Particularly, what advantage is there in being circumcised? The Old Testament regarded being a Jew and circumcision as advantages in one's relationship to God.

3:2 There are many advantages to being a circumcised Jew. Paul only gave the most important one here ("they were entrusted with the actual words of God"), but later he referred to others (9:4-5). The phrase "actual words of God" refers to special revelation. The Greek word *logia* ("actual words" or oracles) stresses the fact that the Old Testament, and the messianic

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 180.

prophecies in particular,<sup>1</sup> were the very utterances of God preserved and handed down by earlier generations (cf. v. 3; Acts 7:38; Heb. 5:12; 1 Pet. 4:11).<sup>2</sup> "Entrusted" highlights Israel's responsibility to guard and to propagate what she had received as a treasure.

Some people today also enjoy spiritual advantages and falsely conclude that because of these God will give them preferential treatment. I have heard it said: "My grandfather was a minister, so God will look with favor on me."

3:3 Paul's second question was this: God will not forsake His promises to bless the nation because some of the Israelites proved unfaithful will He? The objection that Paul voiced calls attention to the promises that God had given to Israel in the Old Testament covenants. These, too, constituted an advantage for the Jews.

By referring to the "unbelief" of the Jews Paul was looking at the root of their unfaithfulness to God. Of the generation that received the Law at Sinai, for example, only two adults proved faithful: Caleb and Joshua. Still God brought the whole nation into Canaan as He had promised, though the unbelieving generation died in the wilderness.

3:4 Paul agreed that Israel's unbelief would not nullify the faithfulness of God. "Far from it!" God would remain true to His word to bless Israel as He had promised He would. God would even be faithful if everyone else proved unfaithful ("though every person be found a liar"), not just if some proved unfaithful. Paul cited David's testimony to God's faithfulness after David's own unfaithfulness as historic biblical support.

Today some people improperly count on God's character to excuse them from the consequences of their sins. For example, some believe that since God is love, He will be gracious with them and not punish them.

---

<sup>1</sup>Johnson, *Discovering Romans*, pp. 49-50; William G. T. Shedd, *A Critical and Doctrinal Commentary on the Epistle of St. Paul to the Romans*, p. 63.

<sup>2</sup>Cf. Sanday and Headlam pp. 70-71; and Harrison, p. 35.

3:5 The third question connects with David's situation (v. 4): Since the Jews' failings set off God's righteousness more sharply by contrast—as was true in David's case—might not God deal more graciously with the Jews in His judgment of them?

Here, Dunn believed, Paul began to debate with himself with the voice of another person taking part in the conversation.<sup>1</sup> "What shall we say?" means: What inference shall we draw?<sup>2</sup> Richard Lenski believed that "we" in verse 5 and following refers to Paul and the Roman Christians.<sup>3</sup>

Evidently Paul felt it necessary to explain that he was "speaking from a human viewpoint," or using a human argument, because he, representing an objector, had suggested that God was unjust. He did not want his readers to conclude that he really thought that God was unfaithful to His own Person and Word. He was just saying that for the sake of his argument.

"It [the technical term "I am speaking from a human viewpoint"] constitutes an apology for a statement which, but for the apology, would be too bold, almost blasphemous."<sup>4</sup>

3:6 Paul's answer was this: God will not show favoritism to the Jews even though by their great unfaithfulness they glorify the faithfulness of God. If He did so He would be partial and not qualified to sit in judgment on humankind ("how will God judge the world?" cf. Gen. 18:25).

Unfortunately, some people still think that God owes them mercy because their sinful way of life has provided God with an opportunity to demonstrate His own excellence, such as His patience, His love, or His kindness.

3:7 The fourth question is very similar to the third. Perhaps Paul raised it as a response to his immediately preceding answer in

---

<sup>1</sup>Dunn, p. 141.

<sup>2</sup>Denney, 2:604.

<sup>3</sup>Lenski, 219.

<sup>4</sup>David Daube, *The New Testament and Rabbinic Judaism*, p. 396.

verse 6. This question clarifies the folly of the idea expressed in the third question. What an objector might really be saying in question three comes out in question four: If my lying, for example, glorifies God by showing Him to be the only perfectly truthful person, why does God punish me for lying? Paul had been stressing reality and priorities in chapter 2. This objection gets down to that level. If circumcision is of secondary importance compared to perfect obedience to God, is not sinning of secondary importance to glorifying God?

3:8 Paul's reply was that, in spite of accusations to the contrary, he had not taught that the end justifies the means. Circumcision was secondary, but it was not sinful. God will not overlook sin, though He will overlook lack of circumcision (2:26-29). If anyone thinks that God should overlook his sinning because in some imagined sense it glorifies God, that person deserves "condemnation." Paul implied that this objection is so absurd that it is not worth considering.

A notable historical instance of a person who reasoned as this objector did is the Russian monk Gregory Rasputin. He was the evil genius of the Romanov family in the last years of that family's power. Rasputin taught and exemplified the idea that salvation comes through repeated experiences of sin and repentance. He held that since those who sin most require most forgiveness, a sinner who continues to sin with abandon enjoys, each time he repents, more of God's forgiving grace than an ordinary sinner. This antinomian (against moral law) point of view has been more common than is often realized, even when it is not expressed and practiced so blatantly as it was by Rasputin.

"Evidently Paul had to face the charge that he taught antinomianism, and worse."<sup>1</sup>

To summarize, in verses 1 through 8 Paul raised and answered four objections that a Jew might have offered to squirm out from under the

---

<sup>1</sup>Barrett, p. 65.



guilty verdict that Paul had pronounced on him in chapter 2. The essential objections are as follows:

1. The Jews are a privileged people (vv. 1-2).
2. God will remain faithful to the Jews despite their unfaithfulness to Him (vv. 3-4).
3. God will be merciful since the Jews' failings have magnified God's righteousness (vv. 5-6).
4. God will overlook the Jews' sins since they contribute to the glory of God (vv. 7-8).

Self-righteous people still raise these objections. Some people assume that because God has blessed them He will not condemn them (objection one). Some believe that the character of God prohibits Him from condemning them (objection two). Some think that, even though they have sinned, God will be merciful and not condemn them (objection three). Some feel that, since everything people do glorifies God in one way or another, God would be unjust to condemn them (objection four).

"Thousands of so-called 'church-members' not only have never been brought under real conviction of sin and guilt and personal danger, but rise in anger like the Jews of Paul's day when one preaches their danger directly to them!"<sup>1</sup>

### C. THE GUILT OF ALL HUMANITY 3:9-20

Having now proven all people, both Jews and Gentiles, under God's wrath, Paul drove the final nail in humankind's spiritual coffin by citing Scriptural proof.

- 3:9           The question "What then?" introduces a conclusion to the argument that all people are guilty before God. Paul identified himself with the Jews about whom he had recently been speaking. Jews are not "better" than Gentiles, even though they had received greater privileges from God. Being "under sin" means being under its domination and condemnation.

---

<sup>1</sup>Newell, p. 78.

"... the problem with people is not just that they commit sins; their problem is that they are enslaved to sin."<sup>1</sup>

3:10-18 Paul was writing to a primarily Gentile congregation, so he *concluded* his argument with an appeal to Scripture. Contrast the writer of the Epistle to the Hebrews who took the opposite approach when he addressed a primarily Jewish readership. He *began* with Scripture and proceeded to argue from it. The collection of passages that Paul used both affirmed the universality of sin (vv. 10-12) and showed its pervasive inroads into all areas of individual and corporate life (vv. 13-18).

In verses 10 through 12 a statement of the universality of sin opens and closes the passage. Sin has affected human intellect, emotions, and volition, namely, all aspects of human personhood. Note the repetition of "not even one" and "not one" plus "all," which are all universal terms. In verses 13 through 18 Paul described the words (vv. 13-14), acts (vv. 15-17), and attitudes (v. 18) of people as all tainted by sin.

"The ... five quotations (vv 11-14 [*sic* 10-14], 18), all from the Psalms, are the more interesting, since all would normally be read within the synagogue as bolstering the assumption that the (Jewish) righteous could plead against the ([G]entile) wicked, very much in the spirit of 1 *Enoch* 99.3-4 ..."<sup>2</sup>

A sixth quotation, from Isaiah 59:7-8 (cf. Prov. 1:16), appears in verses 15 through 17.

This passage is one of the most forceful in Scripture that deals with the total depravity of man. Total depravity does not mean that every person is as bad as he or she could be. It means that sin has affected every part of his or her being, and

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 201.

<sup>2</sup>Dunn, p. 157.

consequently there is nothing anyone can do to commend himself or herself to a holy God.

"Depravity means that man fails the test of pleasing God. He [*sic* It] denotes his unmeritoriousness in God's sight. This failure is total in that (a) it affects all aspects of man's being, and (b) it affects all people."<sup>1</sup>

The statement that "there is no one who seeks out God" (v. 11) means that no one seeks God without God prompting him or her to do so (cf. John 6:44-46). No one seeks after God for His own sake. It does not mean that people are constitutionally incapable of seeking God. People can and should seek God (Acts 17:26-27), and they are responsible for not doing so.

"Paul's portrayal of the unrighteous person may seem overly pessimistic to many contemporaries. After all, do we not all know certain individuals who live rather exemplary lives apart from Christ? Certainly they do not fit the description just laid out. Although it may be true that many of our acquaintances are not as outwardly wicked as the litany would suggest, we must remember that they are also benefactors of a civilization deeply influenced by a pervasive Judeo-Christian ethic. Take away the beneficent influence of Christian social ethics and their social behavior would be considerably different."<sup>2</sup>

Verse 18 concludes the quotations by giving the root problem (cf. 1:18-32).

"It is no kindness, but a terrible wrong, to hide from a criminal the sentence that must surely overtake him unless pardoned; for a physician to conceal from a patient a cancer that will destroy him unless quickly removed; for one acquainted

---

<sup>1</sup>Charles C. Ryrie, *Basic Theology*, pp. 218-19.

<sup>2</sup>Mounce, p. 110.

with the hidden pitfalls of a path he beholds someone taking, not to warn him of his danger!"<sup>1</sup>

"... this collection of OT quotations illustrates the various forms of sin, the undesirable characteristics of sinners, the effect of their action, and their attitude toward God. This is the same picture that Paul himself has been painting."<sup>2</sup>

3:19 Paul added that "whatever the Law says" it addresses to those "under" its authority, namely, all the Jews. He wrote this to take the ground out from under any Jewish reader who might try to say that the passages just quoted refer only to the godless. The result of its condemnation is that no one will be able to open his "mouth" in his own defense before God (cf. Rev. 20:11-14). "All the world" describes all of humanity again.

"Probably Paul is using an implicit 'from the greater to the lesser' argument: if Jews, God's chosen people, cannot be excluded from the scope of sin's tyranny, then it surely follows that Gentiles, who have no claim on God's favor, are also guilty."<sup>3</sup>

3:20 The purpose of the Mosaic Law was not to provide people with a series of steps that would lead them to heaven. One of its purposes was to expose their inability to merit heaven (Gal. 3:24).

"It is the proper use and intendment [intention] of the law to open our wound, and therefore not likely to be the remedy."<sup>4</sup>

Jesus had previously said that no one carries out the Law completely (John 7:19). Paul had more to say about the works of the Law (i.e., works done in obedience to the Law, good

---

<sup>1</sup>Newell, pp. 85-86.

<sup>2</sup>Mickelsen, p. 1191.

<sup>3</sup>Moo, p. 206.

<sup>4</sup>Henry, p. 1760.

works) in Galatians (cf. Gal. 2:16; 3:2, 5, 9-10). If someone breaks only one law, he or she is a lawbreaker. The Law is similar to a chain. If someone breaks even one link, the chain cannot save. If someone wants to earn God's commendation of being perfectly righteous, he or she must obey God's Law perfectly (cf. Matt. 5:48). It is impossible therefore to earn justification (a right standing before God) by performing the works that God's Law requires.<sup>1</sup> This verse probably serves to confirm human accountability rather than giving a reason for it.<sup>2</sup> "None of mankind" is literally "no flesh" in Greek. By using this phrase Paul drew attention to the frailty of human nature.<sup>3</sup>

"To hold onto the Law is like a man jumping out of an airplane, and instead of taking a parachute, he takes a sack of cement with him."<sup>4</sup>

Every human being needs the gospel because everyone is a sinner and is under God's condemnation. In this first major section of Romans (1:18—3:20) Paul proved the universal sinfulness of humankind. He first showed the need of all people generally (1:18-32). Then he dealt with the sinfulness of self-righteous people, first self-righteous people in general and then specifically the self-righteous Jews (2:1—3:8). He set forth three principles by which God judges (2:1-16), proved the guilt of Jews, God's chosen people (2:17-29), and answered four objections that Jews might pose to his argument (3:1-8). Then he concluded by showing that the Old Testament also taught the depravity of every human being (3:9-20).

"The whole third chapter of Romans is nothing but a description of original sin [vs. 1-20]."<sup>5</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>See Kenneth W. Allen, "Justification by Faith," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 135:538 (April-June 1978):109-16.

<sup>2</sup>Moo, p. 206. See Dunn, p. 159, for a "new perspective" interpretation of this verse.

<sup>3</sup>Denney, 2:608.

<sup>4</sup>McGee, 4:665.

<sup>5</sup>Calvin, 2:1:9. See also *ibid.*, 2:3:2.

### III. THE IMPUTATION OF GOD'S RIGHTEOUSNESS 3:21—5:21

The first major section of Romans, the need for God's righteousness (1:18—3:20), proves that people have no hope of obtaining righteousness on their own. In the second major section, the imputation of God's righteousness (3:21—5:21), we learn how it comes to us, namely, as a gracious gift from God. We receive God's righteousness, which results in a right standing with God, by faith.

In beginning the next section of his argument Paul returned to the major subject of this epistle: the righteousness of God (v. 21; cf. 1:17). He also repeated the need for faith (v. 22; cf. 1:16), and he summarized his point that everyone is guilty before God (v. 22; cf. 1:18—3:20). This brief recapitulation (vv. 21-22) introduces his explanation of the salvation that God provides for guilty sinners that follows (vv. 23-26).

"The first main division of the epistle forms a powerful negative argument for the second, and was evidently so intended. Since man is a sinner with no help in himself and none in the law, what is left to him but to look to the mercy of God? ... In a court of justice it is only after every defense has failed and the law itself has been shown to be broken, it is only at this point that the appeal is made to the judge for his clemency [mercy]. The epistle has brought us to such a point."<sup>1</sup>

#### A. THE DESCRIPTION OF JUSTIFICATION 3:21-26

Paul began by explaining the concept of justification.<sup>2</sup>

"We now come to the unfolding of that word which Paul in Chapter One declares to be the very heart of the gospel ..."<sup>3</sup>

3:21        The phrase "the righteousness of God" here refers to God's method of bringing people into right relationship with Himself. His method is apart from the Mosaic Law (cf. v. 20). The definite article "the" before "Law" is absent in the Greek text,

---

<sup>1</sup>Stifler, p. 58.

<sup>2</sup>See Carl F. H. Henry, "Justification: A Doctrine in Crisis," *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 38:1 (March 1995):57-65, for discussion of the crisis that Protestant and Catholic reconciliation (rapprochement) poses for the doctrine of justification.

<sup>3</sup>Newell, p. 92.

though the law in view here clearly refers to the Mosaic Law (cf. v. 20).

Dunn understood "apart from the law" to mean "apart from the law understood as a badge of Jewishness, understood as the chief identifying characteristic of covenant membership by those 'within the law.'"<sup>1</sup> I see no reason for taking it in this restricted sense.

The righteousness of God "has been revealed" (perfect tense in Greek, "stands revealed"), namely, through the coming and ministry of Jesus Christ. He revealed God's righteousness more clearly and powerfully that it had been revealed previously. The reference to the Old Testament as "the Law and the Prophets," two major sections of the Hebrew Bible in which the revelation of God's righteousness appears, prepares the way for chapter 4 (cf. Matt. 5:17). There Paul discussed Abraham and David, two representatives of these two sections of Scripture, who obtained God's righteousness by faith—even before the coming of Christ.

3:22 God's righteousness becomes people's possession, and begins to operate in their life, "through faith in Jesus Christ" (v. 28; cf. Gal. 2:16; Mark 11:22). "Faith," *pistis*, can also mean "faithfulness," but Paul almost always meant "faith" when he used this Greek word. Contextual clues indicate when he meant "faithfulness."

Here Paul introduced the object of faith, namely, Jesus Christ, for the first time (cf. 1:16-17). He never wrote that people obtain salvation because of their faith in Christ, by the way. This would encourage the idea that our faith makes a contribution to our salvation and has some merit. Faith simply takes what God gives. It adds nothing to the gift.

"Faith ... plays a double part in justification. It is the disposition which God accepts, and which He imputes as righteousness; and it is at the same time the instrument whereby every one may

---

<sup>1</sup>Dunn, p. 177.

appropriate for his own personal advantage this *righteousness of faith*."<sup>1</sup>

"The righteousness of God is not put 'upon' any one. That is a Romish idea,—still held, alas, among Protestants who cannot escape the conception of righteousness as a something bestowed upon us, rather than a Divine reckoning about us."<sup>2</sup>

There is "no distinction" between Jews and Gentiles concerning their being "under sin" (v. 9). Likewise there is no distinction regarding the manner by which both Jews and Gentiles obtain salvation. All receive salvation "through faith in Jesus Christ."

3:23 All must come to God by faith in Jesus Christ because "all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God" (cf. Mark 10:21). "The glory of God" refers to the outward display of what God is. It includes especially the majesty of His powerful Person and the sublimity of His supremely elevated position.<sup>3</sup> Sin separates people from fellowship with a holy God. We all lack both the character of God and the fellowship of God because of our sin.

"Every man, according to the world's law, is considered innocent until he is proven guilty. The Word of God takes the opposite approach. God says that man is guilty until he is proven innocent."<sup>4</sup>

3:24 "We now come to the greatest single verse in the entire Bible on the manner of justification by faith: We entreat you, study this verse. We have seen many a soul, upon understanding it, come into peace."<sup>5</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Godet, p. 147. Cf. Newell, p. 108.

<sup>2</sup>Ibid., p. 110.

<sup>3</sup>Mickelsen, p. 1192; Harrison, p. 41.

<sup>4</sup>McGee, 4:318.

<sup>5</sup>Newell, p. 114.



It is all who believe (v. 22), not all who have sinned (v. 23), who receive justification (v. 24).<sup>1</sup> Justification is an act, not a process. And it is something that God does, not man. As mentioned previously, justification is a forensic (legal) term. On the one hand it means "to acquit" (Exod. 23:7; Deut. 25:1; Acts 13:39). On the other positive side it means "to declare righteous." But it does not mean to make one's behavior righteous. It means to make one's position in the sight of God righteous.

"The word never means to make one righteous, or holy; but to account one righteous. Justification is not a change wrought by God in us, but a change of our relation to God."<sup>2</sup>

Justification describes a person's status in respect to God's law, not the condition of his or her character. The condition of one's character and conduct has to do with (progressive) sanctification.

"Justification means that God treats sinful men as if they were of complete and unstained virtue."<sup>3</sup>

"Do not confuse justification and sanctification. Sanctification is the process whereby God makes the believer more and more like Christ. Sanctification may change from day to day. Justification never changes. When the sinner trusts Christ, God declares him righteous, and that declaration will never be repealed. God looks on us and deals with us as though we had never sinned at all!"<sup>4</sup>

In the quotation above Wiersbe was describing progressive sanctification. There is a sense in which the believer in Christ

---

<sup>1</sup>See Blue, pp. 338-50.

<sup>2</sup>Newell, p. 114. See also Moo, p. 227.

<sup>3</sup>Barrett, p. 75.

<sup>4</sup>Wiersbe, 1:522.

is already sanctified (set apart to God), which is positional sanctification.

God, the Judge, sees the justified sinner "in Christ Jesus" (i.e., in terms of his or her relation to His Son), with whom the Father is well pleased (8:1; cf. Phil. 3:8-9; 1 Cor. 1:30; 2 Cor. 5:21). Justification includes forgiveness but is larger than forgiveness.

"God declares that He reckons righteous the ungodly man who ceases from all works, and believes on Him (God), as the God who, on the ground of Christ's shed blood, 'justifies the ungodly' (4.5). He declares such an one righteous: reckoning to him all the absolute value of Christ's work,—of His expiating death [i.e., His death that removed our guilt], and of His resurrection, and placing him *in Christ*: where he is the righteousness of God: for Christ is that!"<sup>1</sup>

"We do not need therefore a personal 'standing' before God at all. This is the perpetual struggle of legalistic theology,—to state how we can have a 'standing' before God. But to maintain this is still to think of us as separate from Christ (instead of dead and risen with Him), and needing such a 'standing.' But if we are in Christ in such an absolute way that Christ Himself has been made unto us righteousness, we are immediately relieved from the need of having any 'standing.' Christ is our standing, Christ Himself! And Christ being the righteousness of God, we, being thus utterly and vitally in Christ before God, have no other place but in Him. We are 'the righteousness of God in Christ.'"<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Newell, p. 100.

<sup>2</sup>Ibid., p. 104.

God bestows justification freely "as a gift." The reason for His giving it is His own "grace," not anything in the sinner.

"*Grace* means pure unrecompensed [unreimbursed] kindness and favor."<sup>1</sup>

That is, "grace" (Gr. *charis*) is not something that God give us in repayment for something that we have done for Him. Grace is the basis for "joy" (*chara*), and it leads to "thanksgiving" (*eucharistia*). All three of these Greek words have the same root. Thus they are closely related.

"The redemption which is in Christ Jesus" is the means that God used to bring the gift of justification to human beings. The Greek word for "redemption" used here (*apolutroseos*) denotes a deliverance obtained by purchase (cf. Matt. 20:28; 1 Tim. 2:6; 1 Pet. 1:18; 1 Cor. 6:20; 7:23; Gal. 3:13). Everywhere in the New Testament this Greek word, when used metaphorically, as here, refers to "deliverance effected through the death of Christ from the retributive wrath of a holy God and the merited penalty of sin ..."<sup>2</sup>

Paul's use of "Christ Jesus," rather than the normal "Jesus Christ," stresses the fact that God provided redemption by supplying the payment. That payment was the Messiah (Christ) promised in the Old Testament, who was Jesus of Nazareth.

"The emphasis is on the *cost* of man's redemption."<sup>3</sup>

Though the question of who received the ransom price that Christ paid for our redemption has divided theologians, Scripture is quite clear that He offered Himself as a sacrifice to God (Luke 23:46).

"Before you leave verse 24, apply it to yourself, if you are a believer. Say of yourself: 'God has

---

<sup>1</sup>Lewis S. Chafer, *Grace*, p. 2. Underlining omitted.

<sup>2</sup>*A Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament*, s.v. "*apolutrosis*," p. 65.

<sup>3</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 86.

declared me righteous without any cause in me, by His grace, through the redemption from sin's penalty that is in Christ Jesus.' It is the bold, believing use *for ourselves* of the Scripture we learn, that God desires; and not merely the knowledge of Scripture."<sup>1</sup>

"*The gospel is that God sets to rights man's relationship with himself by an act of sheer generosity which depends on no payment man can make, which is without reference to whether any individual in particular is inside the law/covenant or outside, and which applies to all human beings without exception.*"<sup>2</sup>

The apostles described justification in several different ways, as the following table illustrates:<sup>3</sup>

Justified by faith (Rom. 1:17; 3:28, 30; 5:1).	This phrase emphasizes the <i>instrument</i> that brings about justification.
Justified by grace (Rom. 3:24; 5:16; Titus 3:7).	This phrase emphasizes the <i>motivation</i> behind justification.
Justified by blood (Rom. 3:25; 5:9).	This phrase emphasizes the <i>grounds</i> of justification.
Justified by God (Rom. 3:26; 8:30, 33).	This phrase emphasizes the <i>source</i> of justification.
Justified by Christ (Rom. 4:5, 25; 5:18; 1 Cor. 6:11).	This phrase emphasizes the <i>provider</i> of justification.
Justified by the Spirit (1 Cor. 6:11).	This phrase emphasizes the <i>applier</i> of justification.

---

<sup>1</sup>Newell, p. 116.

<sup>2</sup>Dunn, p. 179.

<sup>3</sup>Modified from Fruchtenbaum, *The Book ...*, p. 91.

Justified by works (James 2:21, 24-25).	This phrase emphasizes the <i>evidence</i> of justification.
---	--

3:25 Paul stressed "faith" in this verse. Therefore we should probably understand his reference to the public display of Christ as being an allusion to His being presented in the gospel message rather than to His crucifixion.

There are two possible meanings of "propitiation" (satisfaction) or "sacrifice of atonement" (NIV, atoning sacrifice). The Greek word (*hilasterion*) is an adjective that can substitute for a noun. It means having placating (making peace) or expiating (making amends) force.<sup>1</sup> It could refer to the body of Jesus Christ as the "place" where God satisfied His wrath and removed our sins. This is the substantival usage, translated "propitiation." In favor of this interpretation is the use of this Greek word to translate the mercy seat on the ark of the covenant (Exod. 25:17, LXX; Heb. 9:5).<sup>2</sup>

However it seems more natural to take *hilasterion* as referring to Jesus Christ Himself as the sacrifice that satisfied God's wrath and removed our sins (cf. Luke 18:13; Heb. 2:17). This is the normal adjectival use, translated "sacrifice of atonement" (cf. 1 John 2:2; 4:10). Jesus Christ was the sacrifice, but the place where God made atonement was the Cross.

The translation "through faith in His blood" (NIV) correctly represents the word order in the Greek text. Paul elsewhere urged faith in the person of Jesus Christ (vv. 22, 26). Probably Paul mentioned His blood here, as representing His life poured out as a sacrifice that made amends for our sins, rather than the person of Christ, in order to draw attention to what made His sacrifice atoning, namely, His blood (cf. 5:9; Eph. 1:7; 2:13; Col. 1:20). This then is a metonymy, a figure of speech in which

---

<sup>1</sup>A *Greek-English ...*, s.v. "*hilasterios*," p. 301.

<sup>2</sup>LXX refers to the Septuagint translation of the Old Testament into Greek that was made in the third century B.C.

the name of one thing ("blood") appears in the place of another (death) associated with it.

The full idea of the first part of the verse would then be this: God has publicly displayed Jesus Christ in the gospel as a sacrifice of atonement that satisfied God's wrath and removed the guilt of our sins. His sacrifice becomes effective for those who trust in Him.

The antecedent of "this" is the redemption that God provided in Christ (v. 24), as is clear in the NIV translation. Another reason that God provided an atoning sacrifice was to justify (declare righteous) God's own character (i.e., to vindicate Him). This was necessary because God had not finally dealt with sins committed before Jesus died. God had shown forbearance, not out of weakness or sentimentality as might be suspected, but because He planned to provide a final sacrifice in the future, namely, at the Cross (cf. Acts 17:30).

"In what sense can the Death of Christ be said to demonstrate the righteousness of God? It demonstrates it by showing the impossibility of simply passing over sin."<sup>1</sup>

God did not forgive the sins of Old Testament saints finally until Jesus died on the cross. The blood of the animal sacrifices of Judaism only covered (removed) them temporarily. God did not exact a full penalty for sin until Jesus died. It is as though the Old Testament believers, who offered the sacrifices for the removal of sin that the Mosaic Law required, paid for those sins with a credit card. God accepted those sacrifices as a temporary payment. However, the bill came due later, and Jesus Christ paid that off entirely.<sup>2</sup>

"Paul has thus pressed into service the language of the law-court ('justified'), the slave-market ('redemption') and the altar ('expiation', 'atoning

---

<sup>1</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 89.

<sup>2</sup>See also Kenneth S. Wuest, *Word Studies in the Greek New Testament*, 1:2:62; Jarvis Williams, "Violent Atonement in Romans: The Foundation of Paul's Soteriology," *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 53:3 (September 2010):579-99.

sacrifice') in the attempt to do justice to the fullness of God's gracious act in Christ. Pardon, liberation, atonement—all are made available to men and women by his free initiative and may be appropriated by faith."<sup>1</sup>

3:26 This verse explains the significance of Jesus Christ's death since the Cross. It demonstrates God's righteousness, the subject of Romans, by showing that God is both "just" in His dealings with sin and "the Justifier" who provides righteous standing for the sinner. Note that it is only those who have faith in Jesus who stand justified.

Dunn defined faith well as "trust that Christ's ransom and expiatory sacrifice has been effective, and trust in Jesus himself ..."<sup>2</sup>

"It is God Himself who, according to this passage, is to be regarded as the *author* of the whole work of redemption."<sup>3</sup>

Verses 21 through 26 constitute an excellent explanation of God's imputation (placing on) of righteousness to believing sinners by describing justification. These verses contain "God's great statement of justification by faith."<sup>4</sup> To summarize, God can declare sinners righteous because Jesus Christ has paid the penalty for their sins by dying in their place. His death satisfied God's demands against sinners completely. Now God declares righteous (right with Him) those who trust in Jesus Christ as their Substitute.

"Justification is the act of God whereby He declares the believing sinner righteous in Christ on the basis of the finished work of Christ on the cross."<sup>5</sup>

"... we explain justification simply as the acceptance with which God receives us into his favor as righteous men. And we

---

<sup>1</sup>Bruce, pp. 101-2.

<sup>2</sup>Dunn, p. 183.

<sup>3</sup>Godet, p. 150.

<sup>4</sup>Newell, p. 92.

<sup>5</sup>Wiersbe, 1:522.

say that it consists in the remission of sins and the imputation of Christ's righteousness."<sup>1</sup>

"... the direct exposition of the righteousness by faith ends with the twenty-sixth verse. If the epistle had ended there it would not have been incomplete. All the rest is a consideration of objections [and, I might add, implications], in which the further unfolding of the righteousness is only incidental."<sup>2</sup>

The characteristics of justification are that it is: apart from the Law (v. 21), through faith in Christ (v. 22a), for (available to) all people (vv. 22b-23), by grace (v. 24), at great cost to God (vv. 24b-25), and in perfect justice (v. 26).<sup>3</sup>

### **B. THE DEFENSE OF JUSTIFICATION BY FAITH ALONE 3:27-31**

Having shown what justification is, Paul went on to reaffirm that it is available only by faith. He proceeded to expound his great theological thesis of 3:21 through 26. Verses 27 through 31 state this theme, and chapter 4 clarifies and elaborates on it.

3:27-28 There is no place for human "boasting" in this plan of salvation (cf. Eph. 2:8-9). In contrast, the Jews were inclined to boast because of their privileges (2:17, 23). The reason is that God's provision of salvation by faith springs from a different kind of law—"the law of faith," taught in the Old Testament—than salvation by "works" does.

"One would think that the sinner would love to be forgiven at no cost. Unfortunately that is not the case. After all, sinners have their pride. They desperately want to claim some role in their own redemption."<sup>4</sup>

Salvation by works requires keeping rules. The Mosaic Law did not require works for salvation, but those who hope to earn

---

<sup>1</sup>Calvin, 3:11:2.

<sup>2</sup>Stifler, p. 67.

<sup>3</sup>Wiersbe, 1:523-24.

<sup>4</sup>Mounce, p. 38.



salvation by their works—here the Jews are in view particularly because they boasted in the Law—look to the Mosaic Law as what God requires ("works of the Law"). God's gift of salvation, however, rests on a different "law" or principle that God has also ordained and revealed. This law states that salvation becomes ours by faith in Jesus Christ. Faith is what God requires, not works.

"... He *has* sent His Son, who *has* borne sin for you. You do not look to Christ to do something to save you: He *has done it* at the cross. You simply receive God's testimony as true, setting your seal thereto. (I often quote I Timothy 1.15 to inquiring sinners: 'Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners.' In response to my question, they confess that 'came' is in the past tense. Then I say, 'How sad that you and I were not there, so that He might have saved us, for He has now gone back to heaven!' This shuts them up to contemplate the work Christ *finished when He was here*; upon which work, and God's Word concerning it, sinners must rest: *that is faith*.) You rest in God's Word regarding Christ and His work for you. You rest in Christ's shed blood."<sup>1</sup>

Some people have difficulty understanding that faith is not a work because exercising faith is something that we do. While faith does involve doing something—trusting—the Bible never regards trusting God as a work. It regards faith, rather, as the act of believing a statement and relying on the truthfulness of the One who made it. God said, "everyone who believes in Him [Jesus Christ, His Son] will not perish, but have eternal life" (John 3:16). Faith involves accepting that promise as true. Someone has compared saving faith to reaching out to accept a gift that another person offers, like a Christmas present. One must extend his or her arm to receive the gift, but that act does not constitute doing something that earns the gift.

---

<sup>1</sup>Newell, p. 109.

3:29-30 Paul continued to appeal particularly to his Jewish audience in these verses as in the former two. If justification is by the Mosaic Law, God must be "the God of Jews only," since God gave the Mosaic Law to the Jews, not the Gentiles. Paul's point was that there are not two ways of salvation, one for the Jews ("the circumcised") by works and the other for the Gentiles ("the uncircumcised") by faith. This is only logical, he reasoned, since there is only one God who is the God of all humankind. Paul probably used two separate prepositions in verse 30 ("by," *ek*, and "through," *dia*) simply for literary variety.<sup>1</sup> His point was that there is only one method of obtaining God's righteousness: by faith.<sup>2</sup>

3:31 Paul was not saying that the Mosaic Law is valueless and therefore no longer necessary. The absence of the definite article "the" before the first occurrence of "Law," in this verse in the Greek text, does not indicate that Paul was only thinking of law in general, as the context makes clear. Even though he believed in salvation by faith, Paul saw the Law as having an important continuing function ("we establish the Law").<sup>3</sup> Probably he meant that its function is still to convict people of their inability to gain acceptance with God by their own works (vv. 19-20).

Another view is that Paul meant the Old Testament ("Law") testifies to justification by faith.<sup>4</sup> A third view is that faith provides the complete fulfillment of God's demands in His Law.<sup>5</sup> The Law is not something God has given people to obey so that they can obtain righteousness. Man's inability to save himself required God's provision of a Savior. The Law in a sense made Jesus Christ's death necessary (vv. 24-25). S. Lewis

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 252.

<sup>2</sup>Harrison, p. 46.

<sup>3</sup>See Femi Adeyemi, "Paul's 'Positive' Statements about the Mosaic Law," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 164:653 (January-March 2007):49-58; and Gregory S. MaGee, "Paul's Gospel, the Law, and God's Universal Reign in Romans 3:31," *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 57:2 (June 2014):341-50.

<sup>4</sup>Godet, pp. 166-67; Alford, 2:2:346; Cranfield, 1:224; et al.

<sup>5</sup>Moo, pp. 254-55; et al.

Johnson believed that Paul had the Ten Commandments in mind here (cf. vv. 20, 27, 28).<sup>1</sup>

The point of verses 27 through 31 is that justification must come to all people by faith alone. Paul clarified here that this fact excludes boasting (vv. 27-28). Justification by faith is also reasonable in view of the sovereignty of God over all humanity (vv. 29-30), and it does not nullify the Mosaic Law (v. 31).

"... Luther rendered 'justification by faith' as 'justification by faith alone.' When taken to task for this liberty, he replied that he was not translating words but ideas, and that the extra word was necessary in German in order to bring out the force of the original. Through all the revisions of his lifetime he would never relinquish that word 'alone.'"<sup>2</sup>

#### C. THE PROOF OF JUSTIFICATION BY FAITH FROM THE LAW CH. 4

Paul's readers could have understood faith as being a new method of salvation, since he contrasted faith with the Mosaic Law. The apostle began this epistle by saying that the gospel reveals a righteousness from God, implying something new (1:17). Was justification by faith a uniquely Christian revelation, in contrast with Jewish doctrine? No. In this chapter the apostle showed that God has always justified people by faith alone. In particular, he emphasized that God declared Abraham, the father of the Jewish nation, righteous because of his faith. One of the present values of the Old Testament (cf. 3:31) is that it shows that God justified people by faith in the past. If Paul could show from the Old Testament that Abraham received justification by faith, his Jewish readers should see that there is only one method of salvation (3:29-30).

"... as in 3:27-31, Paul's purpose is not only to establish the doctrine of justification by faith alone, but also, indeed especially, to draw out the implications of this *sola fide* [faith alone]. To accomplish these purposes, Paul 'exposits' [explains] Gen. 15:6 ... This text is quoted in v. 3 after Paul sets up his problem in terms of Abraham's 'right' to boast (vv. 1-2). Thereafter, Paul quotes or alludes to this text in every

---

<sup>1</sup>Johnson, *Discovering Romans*, p. 65.

<sup>2</sup>Bainton, p. 261.

paragraph of the chapter, using a series of antitheses to draw out its meaning and implications."<sup>1</sup>

### 1. Abraham's justification by faith 4:1-5

Paul began this chapter by showing that God declared Abraham righteous because of the patriarch's faith.

"Outside of references to the Lord Jesus Christ, and excluding also such references as 'Moses said' or 'Moses wrote,' the names most frequently mentioned in the New Testament are these (in order): (1) Paul, (2) Peter, (3) John the Baptist, and (4) Abraham."<sup>2</sup>

4:1 Paul started with a rhetorical question that he used often in Romans (cf. 6:1; 7:7; 8:31; 9:14, 30): "What then shall we say?" By referring to Abraham as "our forefather according to the flesh," Paul revealed that he was aiming these comments at his Jewish readers primarily. Abraham's case is significant for Gentiles as well, however, because in another sense, as the so-called "father of the faithful," he is the father of "us all" (v. 16). "All" in verse 16 refers to all believers, Jews and Gentiles alike.

4:2 This verse applies Paul's earlier statement about boasting (3:27) to Abraham's case for the sake of contrast. Abraham had no ground for boasting before God, because he received justification by faith, not by works.

This verse may seem to contradict what James wrote in James 2:21: "Was our father Abraham not justified by works when he offered up his son Isaac on the altar?" The solution lies in the meaning of "justification." As explained above, justification means to declare righteous. It does not mean to make righteous. In Genesis 15:6, we read that God declared Abraham righteous. In Genesis 22:1-19, James wrote that Abraham's works declared him righteous. In other words, two different

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 255.

<sup>2</sup>Johnson, *Discovering Romans*, pp. 68-69.

things, God and Abraham's works, on two different occasions, both declared or bore witness to Abraham's righteousness.

4:3 Paul appealed to "Scripture" as the Word of God.

"The Bible is the Word of God in such a way that whatever the Bible says *God* says."<sup>1</sup>

In Paul's day many of the rabbis taught that Abraham experienced justification because of his obedience, rather than because of his faith (cf. Gen. 26:5).

"That Abraham was justified on the ground of his works was indeed what Paul's Jewish contemporaries were accustomed to assume. According to Jub. 23.10, 'Abraham was perfect in all his deeds with the Lord, and well-pleasing in righteousness all the days of his life'; and in *Kidd.* 4:14 it is stated that 'we find that Abraham our father had performed the whole law before it was given, for it is written, Because that Abraham obeyed my voice and kept my charge, my commandments, my statutes, and my laws [Gen. 26.5].'"<sup>2</sup>

The Jews also believed that Abraham had a surplus of merit that was available to his descendants: the Jews.<sup>3</sup> Consequently Paul went back to Genesis 15:6 for his authority.

"For the Apostle and his readers the Scripture was the final and infallible court of appeal."<sup>4</sup>

Exactly what Abraham believed is not clear in Genesis 15. The Hebrew conjunction *waw* when it is used with a perfect tense verb, as in Genesis 15:6, indicates a break in the action. A good translation is: Now he [Abram] had believed in the LORD

---

<sup>1</sup>Benjamin Warfield, quoted by McGee, 4:671.

<sup>2</sup>Cranfield, 1:227. "Jub" refers to the Book of Jubilees, a Jewish book dating probably to the second century B.C. *Kiddushin* is the last tractate of the third order of the *Mishnah Nashim*. Cf. 1 Macc. 2:51.

<sup>3</sup>Robertson, 4:350; Witmer, p. 453. Cf. Luke 3:8.

<sup>4</sup>Vine, p. 62.

[Yahweh]." Abraham had obviously believed God previously (cf. Gen. 12:1-4, 7; 14:22-24; Heb. 11:8). However when Abraham was promised that he would receive an heir from his own body, plus innumerable descendants (Gen. 15:4), He believed this promise as well. Later, in Romans 4:13, Paul revealed that Abraham believed God's promise that "he would be heir of the world." That is, he believed that God would bless the whole world through him. Exactly what Abraham believed is incidental to Paul's point, which was that he trusted God and, specifically, he believed God's promise.

"... Abraham just *believed* God: gave Him the honor of being a God of truth."<sup>1</sup>

Trust in God's promise is what constitutes faith, and what results in justification. The promises of God vary. These promises constitute the content of faith. The object of faith does not vary, however. It is always the person of God. For us, God's promise is that Jesus Christ died as our Substitute, and satisfied all of God's demands against sinners (3:24-25; cf. John 3:16).

Note that God "credited" Abraham's faith "to him as righteousness." Faith itself is not righteousness. Neither is faith a work that earns righteousness. It is not something that we do that adds to God's work that together results in justification. It is only the vehicle by which God's righteousness reaches us. However, it is the only vehicle by which it reaches us.

"Faith rests not on ignorance, but on knowledge. And this is, indeed, knowledge not only of God but of the divine will."<sup>2</sup>

Today, some preachers warn us about "easy believism," a term that they use for the teaching that faith alone is all that is necessary for salvation. But Genesis 15:6 presents faith as the only thing that resulted in Abraham's justification. It sounds

---

<sup>1</sup>Newell, p. 139.

<sup>2</sup>Calvin, 3:2:2.

very much as though Abraham simply gave mental assent to what God told him. But he did more. He trusted. Whereas it is possible for a person simply to acknowledge certain facts as true (to give mental assent to them), saving faith goes beyond that and rests one's hope for the future on them—without adding anything else (cf. Heb. 11:1). In other words, saving faith is trust in God and specifically in His promise to us.

4:4-5 Verses 4-5 contrast faith and works. Work yields "wages" that the person working earns and deserves. Faith receives a "favor" (lit. grace, Gr. *charin*) that the person believing does not earn or deserve. Incredibly, God justifies those who not only fail to deserve justification but deserve condemnation, because they are "ungodly" (or "wicked," NIV; cf. 3:24). This is how far God's grace goes (cf. Deut. 25:1)!

"Here in a nutshell is the Pauline doctrine of justification by faith."<sup>1</sup>

"The parable of the publican and the Pharisee [Luke 18:9-14] is the best commentary upon St Paul's doctrine of justification by faith ..."<sup>2</sup>

In our day there are many subtle as well as obvious perversions of the doctrine of justification by faith alone. Advocates of Lordship Salvation effectively add works to faith when they make total commitment to Jesus Christ necessary for salvation. One astute writer has observed that this "front loading" of the gospel with works is "paving the road back to Rome."<sup>3</sup> Some Lordship Salvation advocates believe that an unbeliever only has to be willing to submit to Christ's Lordship. However, this is only changing the human work from submitting to being willing to submit. One Lordship Salvation advocate wrote that to exclude submission to Christ's Lordship from the gospel message amounts to antinomianism.<sup>4</sup> Later he defined antinomianism as follows:

---

<sup>1</sup>Mickelsen, p. 1193.

<sup>2</sup>Lightfoot, p. 278.

<sup>3</sup>Earl D. Radmacher, "First Response to 'Faith According to the Apostle James' by John F. MacArthur Jr.," *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 33:1 (March 1990):40.

<sup>4</sup>John MacArthur, *Faith Works*, p. 94.

"*antinomianism*: the idea that behavior is unrelated to faith, or that Christians are not bound by any moral law. Antinomianism radically separates justification and sanctification, making practical holiness elective."<sup>1</sup>

Clearly this is not the position of most Christians who believe that faith alone is what God requires instead of faith plus commitment.<sup>2</sup>

Another subtle modern form of "works salvation" often accompanies an incorrect interpretation of the biblical doctrine of perseverance. This view says that if a professing Christian does not continue in the faith and in holiness all his or her life, allowing for occasional lapses, he or she is not a true believer. This view "back loads" the gospel with works. Faithfulness to the Lord thus becomes a condition for salvation. This incorrect interpretation of perseverance often goes hand in hand with Lordship Salvation.

Some who hold these views try to get away from their connection with works by saying that it is God who produces submission and/or sanctification in the believer, not the believer himself.<sup>3</sup> Nonetheless it is the professing Christian whom God holds responsible for his or her choices, not Himself.

"Indeed, every command to the believer implies the necessity of his involvement as part of the process [of progressive sanctification]."<sup>4</sup>

## **2. David's testimony to justification by faith 4:6-8**

Paul cited another eminent man in Jewish history whose words harmonized with the apostle's. Whereas Abraham lived before the Mosaic Law, David lived under it. Abraham's story is in the Law section of the Hebrew Bible and David's is in the Prophets section. Here is the second witness that Paul

---

<sup>1</sup>Ibid., p. 259. Cf. pp. 94-98.

<sup>2</sup>For a response to the Reformed claim that dispensationalists are antinomian (i.e., against law as a standard for Christian living), see Robert A. Pyne, "Antinomianism and Dispensationalism," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 153:610 (April-June 1996):141-54.

<sup>3</sup>E.g., MacArthur, pp. 100-101.

<sup>4</sup>Charles C. Ryrie, *So Great Salvation*, p. 152. Three excellent books on salvation by faith alone, all of which respond to Lordship Salvation, are Ryrie, *So Great ...*; Joseph Dillow, *The Reign of the Servant Kings*; and Zane C. Hodges, *Absolutely Free!*



referred to in 3:21. Abraham represents the patriarchal period of Israel's history, and David represents the monarchy period. As Israel's greatest king one would assume that David would have been a strong advocate of the Mosaic Law. He was, but he did not believe that observing it was the key to justification.

The passage that Paul quoted from David's writings (Ps. 32:1-2) does not state directly that David himself received justification by faith, though he did. It stresses that those to whom God "credits" righteousness (i.e., the justified) are "blessed." Paul was carrying the sense of what he had just written in verse 6 over to explain the meaning of another in verses 7 and 8. The second passage contained the same word, *logizesthai*, which is translated "credits" in verse 6, and translated "taken into account" in verse 8.

"David is not a new illustration of this doctrine, but a new witness to it."<sup>1</sup>

"One of the reasons why Paul quotes these verses is the presence in them of the key word 'reckon' [or "credits"]. The practice of associating verses from the OT on the basis of verbal parallels was a common Jewish exegetical technique."<sup>2</sup>

"He [Paul] merely adduces a saying of David, the inspired singer, which seems to him to complete the testimony of Moses about Abraham."<sup>3</sup>

Psalm 32 is one of David's penitential psalms, which he wrote after he had sinned greatly. Paul not only proved that David believed in imputed rather than earned righteousness with this quotation, but he also showed that when a believer sins his sin does not cancel his justification.

"Forgiveness is more than mere remitting of penalty. Even a hard-hearted judge might remit a man's fine if it were paid by someone else, but forgiveness involves the heart of the forgiver. God's forgiveness is the going forth of God's infinite tenderness toward the object of His mercy. It is God folding

---

<sup>1</sup>Denney, 2:616.

<sup>2</sup>Moo, p. 266.

<sup>3</sup>Godet, p. 172.

the sinner, as the returning prodigal was folded, to His bosom. Such a one is blessed indeed!"<sup>1</sup>

"... it is not the 'reckoning' of people's good works but God's act in *not* reckoning their sins against them that constitutes forgiveness."<sup>2</sup>

"God does keep a record of our works, so that He might reward us when Jesus comes; but He is not keeping a record of our sins."<sup>3</sup>

Since God is omniscient He knows everything that has ever happened. By saying that God forgets our sins the writers of Scripture meant that He will never bring us into judgment for our sins or condemn us for them (cf. 8:1). The idea of forgetting sins is anthropomorphic: the writer ascribes an action of man (forgetting) to God in order to help us understand that God behaves as though He forgets our sins.

### 3. The priority of faith to circumcision 4:9-12

The examples of Abraham and David, who were both Jews, led to the question that Paul raised in the next verse (v. 9). The apostle pointed out that when God declared Abraham righteous the patriarch was still "uncircumcised." He was in effect a Gentile. It was fourteen years later that Abraham underwent "circumcision" (Gen. 17:24-26). His circumcision was a "sign" (label) of what he already possessed. This point would have encouraged Paul's Jewish readers, who made so much of circumcision, to keep it in its proper place as secondary to faith. Paul used Abraham as more than just an example of faith but a model to be followed.

"As the recipient and mediator of the promise, his experience becomes paradigmatic [of the nature of a model] for his spiritual progeny."<sup>4</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Newell, p. 136.

<sup>2</sup>Moo, p. 266.

<sup>3</sup>Wiersbe, 1:525.

<sup>4</sup>Moo, p. 267.

#### 4. The priority of faith to the promise concerning headship of many nations 4:13-17

The Jews believed that they had a claim on Abraham that Gentiles did not have. Obviously he was the father of their nation, and this did place him in a unique relationship to his physical descendants. However they incorrectly concluded that all the blessings that God had promised Abraham would come to them alone. Paul reminded his readers that part of God's promised blessing to Abraham was that he would be the father of many nations (v. 17). God had given him this promise after his justification (Gen. 17:4-6), and He repeated it to Abraham's descendants (Gen. 22:17-18). These nations included the Edomites, the Moabites, the Ammonites, and many others, including Gentile nations. Therefore the Israelites were not the only people that God had promised to bless. They did not have an exclusive right to God's blessings.

4:13 God gave His "promise" to bless the Gentiles through Abraham ("he would be heir of the world") long before He gave the Mosaic "Law." Consequently it was wrong for the Jews to think that the blessing of the Gentiles depended on their obedience to the Law. It depended on God's faithfulness to His promise. God gave that promise to Abraham, not because of his obedience, but because of his "faith." The giving of that promise even antedated Abraham's circumcision.<sup>1</sup>

4:14 To introduce Law-keeping as a condition for the fulfillment of this "promise" would have two effects: First, it would make faith irrelevant ("void"). It would subject this simple unconditional promise to the condition of human obedience. If, for example, a father promised his son a new bicycle, the boy would look forward to receiving it as a gift. However, if the father added the condition that in order to get the bike the boy had to be obedient, he would destroy his son's confidence that he would get the bike. Now obtaining the bicycle depended on obedience. It was no longer a matter of faith ("faith is made void"). The second effect, which is also evident

---

<sup>1</sup>See René A. López, "A Study of Pauline Passages on Inheriting the Kingdom," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 168:672 (October-December 2011):443-44.

in this illustration, is that the promise would be "nullified" (i.e., cancelled out).

4:15 Rather than bringing blessing, which God promised Abraham, "the Law brings about wrath," because no one can keep the Law perfectly. Whenever there is failure, wrath follows. However where there is "no law," any law, there can be no violation, and therefore no wrath. Douglas Moo explained Paul's logic as follows:

"Violation of law turns 'sin' into the more serious offense of 'transgression,' meriting God's wrath[.] God gave the law to the Jews[.] The Jews have transgressed the law (cf. 2:1-29; 3:9-19)[.] The law brought wrath to the Jews[.]"<sup>1</sup>

"Paul, then, is not claiming that there is no 'sin' where there is no law, but, in almost a 'truism,' that there is no deliberate disobedience of positive commands where there is no positive command to disobey."<sup>2</sup>

4:16 This verse summarizes the thought of verses 13 through 15. God gave His promise to make Abraham the father of many nations unconditionally ("in accordance with grace") after the patriarch was justified. Abraham obtained the promise simply by believing it (i.e., "by faith"), not by keeping the Law. This is the only way that the realization of what God had promised could be certain. This part of Paul's argument, therefore, further exalts faith as the only method of justification.<sup>3</sup>

"Faith is helplessness reaching out in total dependence upon God."<sup>4</sup>

4:17 Paul described God as he did here in harmony with the promise that he cited. God gave to Abraham the ability to father "many

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 276. Paragraph divisions omitted.

<sup>2</sup>Ibid., p. 277.

<sup>3</sup>See Robert A. Pyne, "The 'Seed,' the Spirit, and the Blessing of Abraham," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 152:606 (April-June 1995):216-17.

<sup>4</sup>Mounce, p. 127.

nations" when his reproductive powers were dead. God called into being yet uncreated nations as He had called into being the yet uncreated cosmos. He created these nations with a word ("I have made you a father of many nations"), In this case God's word was a promise (cf. Heb. 11:3; 2 Pet. 3:5).<sup>1</sup> Another view is that God named or addressed these uncreated nations, even though they did not yet exist. I prefer view two.

### **5. The exemplary value of Abraham's faith 4:18-22**

Paul concluded his proof that faith was the only method of justification before the Cross by showing that what Abraham did in trusting God is essentially what everyone must do.

4:18 Abraham's hope rested solely on God's promise. He had no "hope" of obtaining descendants naturally. His faith was not a condition for the reception of the promise, but he believed the promise with the intention of receiving it.<sup>2</sup>

"It [Abraham's faith] was both contrary to hope (as far as nature could give hope), and rested on hope (that God could do what nature could not)."<sup>3</sup>

4:19-21 Even though Abraham's faith was stronger at some times than it was at others (cf. Gen. 17:17, 23-27), Paul could say that he did not become weak in faith when God gave him the promise (v. 19).

"When Paul says that Abraham did not 'doubt ... because of unbelief,' he means not that Abraham never had momentary hesitations, but that he avoided a deep-seated and permanent attitude of distrust and inconsistency in relationship to God and his promises."<sup>4</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Cranfield, 1:246.

<sup>2</sup>Godet, p. 181.

<sup>3</sup>Denney, 2:620.

<sup>4</sup>Moo, pp. 284-85. Cf. Alford, 2:2:354; James. 1:6-8.

The patriarch believed God in the face of discouraging facts that he contemplated courageously ("he did not waver in unbelief"). He believed despite the knowledge that what God had promised could not happen naturally. Abraham grew stronger in faith as time passed. The record of his life in Genesis shows this. He was "giving glory to God" by believing that "what God had promised, He was also able to perform."

4:22 This verse brings Paul's argument concerning Abraham's justification to a climax. The apostle had proved the point that he had set out to demonstrate, and he restated Genesis 15:6 as a conclusion (cf. v. 3).

"The spiritual attitude of a man, who is conscious that in himself he has no strength, and no hope of a future, and who nevertheless casts himself upon, and lives by, the word of God which assures him of a future, is the necessarily and eternally right attitude of all souls to God. He whose attitude it is, is at bottom right with God."<sup>1</sup>

## 6. Conclusions from Abraham's example 4:23-25

Paul applied God's dealings with Abraham to his readers in this chapter's final verses.

4:23-24 God will credit His righteousness to all who believe in Him. As in verse 3, the content of faith here (v. 24) is not specific. The more important point is that we trust God as Abraham did. Our confidence must be in Him.

Paul was not saying here that we need to believe that God raised Jesus from the dead. That is important, as he wrote elsewhere (1 Cor. 15), not as a condition for salvation but because it is a fact of history. The Resurrection was not part of the saving work of Christ, but it was the consequence of it. Having paid the debt of people's sin, death had no claim on Christ, because He had no sin in Himself (cf. 6:23).

---

<sup>1</sup>Denney, 2:621.

Paul intended his mention of God raising Jesus here to help the reader to remember that He is the same God who brings life out of death as the God whom Abraham believed (cf. vv. 19-21). It may be easier for us to believe than it was for Abraham, because we look back on a resurrection completed, whereas Abraham looked forward to one anticipated.

4:25 What did Paul mean when he spoke of the death and resurrection of Jesus? The NIV interprets the Greek proposition *dia*, which occurs twice in this verse, as "for," implying a prospective sense. The NASB translates it as having a retrospective sense: "because of."

"The clauses are parallel. Christ was raised because all that was necessary on God's part for our justification had been effected in the death of Christ. We had sinned, and therefore Christ was delivered up. The ground of our justification was completely provided in the death of Christ, and therefore He was raised."<sup>1</sup>

The retrospective sense is its usual significance rather than the rarer prospective sense, which we could render "with a view to." "Because of" is probably a clearer translation in view of the normal retrospective use of *dia*, which is its use in parallel statements in this context, and since it makes good sense here. However Paul may have meant that Jesus underwent crucifixion because of our transgressions of God's law (cf. Isa. 53:11-12) and He experienced resurrection with a view to our justification. In other words, it is possible to understand the preposition in a retrospective sense in the first line and in a prospective sense in the second line.<sup>2</sup> God is the implied agent of the action (cf. 3:25; Isa. 53:12).

Taking both phrases in a prospective sense also makes sense, as Denney did:

---

<sup>1</sup>Vine, p. 71.

<sup>2</sup>See Moo, pp. 288-89; Cranfield, 1:252; and Robertson, 4:354.

"He was delivered up on account of our offences—to make atonement for them; and he was raised on account of our justification—that it might become an accomplished fact."<sup>1</sup>

It is very hard to decide which of these views is what Paul intended. But since both views express biblical truth, I believe that he could have written this verse as he did so that his readers would see both meanings.

"Christ being raised up, God announces to me, 'Not only were your sins put away by Christ's blood, so that you are justified *from* all things; but I have also raised up Christ; and you shall have your standing *in Him*. I have given you this faith in a Risen Christ, and announce to you that in Him alone now is your place and standing. Judgment is forever past for you, both as concerns your sin, and as concerns My demand that you have a standing of holiness and righteousness of your own before Me. All this is past. *Christ* is now your standing! He is your life and your righteousness; and you need nothing of your own forever. I made Christ to become sin on your behalf, identified Him with all that you were, in order that you might become the righteousness of God in Him.'"<sup>2</sup>

"God's entire redemptive plan is summarized in this final verse of chap. 4."<sup>3</sup>

I like the story about old Uncle Oscar and his first airplane ride. Knowing that he had been somewhat apprehensive about it, his friends were eager to hear how it went. At the first opportunity they asked him if he enjoyed the flight. "Well," he said, "it wasn't as bad as I thought it might be. But I'll tell you this. I never did put all my weight down!" Unfortunately that is how some people, even Christians, go through their lives. Even

---

<sup>1</sup>Denney, 2:622.

<sup>2</sup>Newell, pp. 157-58. His review of what justification is and is not, on pages 159-61, is also helpful.

<sup>3</sup>Mounce, p. 131.



though Jesus' death satisfied God (1 John 2:2), it does not quite satisfy them.

Chapter 4 is a unit within Paul's exposition of how God imputes His righteousness to sinners (3:21—5:21). It serves to show that justification has always come because of faith toward God and not because the sinner obeyed God's law. This was true before Jesus Christ died as well as after He died. Faith is the only way by which anyone has ever received justification from God. Paul's emphasis was on faith as the method of obtaining righteousness, not on the content of faith, as important as that is.

"In chapter 4, Paul presented several irrefutable reasons why justification is by faith: (1) Since justification is a gift, it cannot be earned by works (vv. 1-8). (2) Since Abraham was justified before he was circumcised, circumcision has no relationship to justification (vv. 9-12). (3) Since Abraham was justified centuries before the Law, justification is not based on the Law (vv. 13-17). (4) Abraham was justified because of his faith in God, not because of his works (vv. 18-25)."<sup>1</sup>

#### D. THE BENEFITS OF JUSTIFICATION 5:1-11

Paul's original readers would have had another question because of what he had written in chapters 1 through 4: Is this method of justification safe? Since it is "by faith" (4:16), and not by works, it seems that it would be quite uncertain. Paul next gave evidence that this method is reliable by explaining the results of justification by faith.

Moo argued that chapter 5 belongs with chapters 6 through 8 more than with 3:21 through 4:25.<sup>2</sup> He noted a chiasmic structure in chapters 5 through 8, and he believed the theme of this section is assurance of glory. Most scholars, however, have felt that the major break in Paul's thought occurs after chapter 5 rather than before it. And I agree with them.

"In the first eleven verses we have the blessed results of justification by faith, along with the most comprehensive

---

<sup>1</sup>Witmer, p. 455.

<sup>2</sup>Moo, pp. 290-95.

statement in the Bible of the pure love and grace of God, in giving Christ for us sinners."<sup>1</sup>

"Paul has demonstrated from the crucial scriptural testimony concerning Abraham how scripture's talk of God's righteousness as reckoned to man should be understood. He now proceeds to draw out this basic insight and its implications not only for the individual believer but also for humankind as a whole."<sup>2</sup>

5:1 "Therefore" signals that what follows rests on what has preceded. Paul now put the question of whether justification is by faith or by works behind him. He had proved that it comes to us by faith apart from works.

"We must note at once that the Greek form of this verb 'declared righteous,' or 'justified,' is not the present participle, '*being* declared righteous,' but rather the aorist participle, '*having been* declared righteous,' or 'justified.' You say, What is the difference? The answer is, 'being declared righteous' looks to a state you are in; 'having been declared righteous' looks back to *a fact that happened*. 'Being in a justified *state*' of course is incorrect, confusing, as it does, justification and sanctification."<sup>3</sup>

"Justification is an act of pure grace. Many ministers actually stay away from the topic of grace because they are inwardly afraid that congregants might misinterpret the message and cheapen grace by thinking that God somehow justifies *sin*. But true grace says that God justifies the *sinner*. Don't be afraid of true grace just because some have cheapened it with a lifestyle where they take their position before God for granted and continue unchanged. Yes, to accept

---

<sup>1</sup>Newell, p. 162.

<sup>2</sup>Dunn, pp. 261-62.

<sup>3</sup>Newell, p. 163.

grace for what it truly is and to live grace out means that some will take advantage of it. You can count on that. But we dare not corrupt the message of grace that permeates the gospel. We are sinners, and true grace is the only possible remedy."<sup>1</sup>

Some important Greek manuscripts read: Let us have peace with God. If this is the correct reading, the meaning is: Let us keep on having (and enjoying) peace with God.<sup>2</sup>

The second of the blessings "that came spilling out of the cornucopia of justification,"<sup>3</sup> after justification itself, is "peace" (cf. 1:7; 2:10). However, this is "peace *with* God" (i.e., reconciliation), not just a subjective feeling of tranquility that is the peace *of* God (Phil. 4:7).

"Indeed, to say that we have peace with God is hardly more than to say that we have been justified, since justification puts an end to the legal strife between Judge and accused. No more than justification is 'peace' an experience; it is an objective status or condition, a relation which exists between God and those whom he justifies. Of course, the objective state is reflected in the *feeling of peace* and security which man enjoys when he knows that he is reconciled to God, and peace in biblical and Jewish usage is a comprehensive description of the blessings of salvation (e.g. Isa. xlviii. 18; 2 Thess. iii. 16)."<sup>4</sup>

Paul had been speaking of God's wrath being poured out on sinners (1:18). Those who stand justified need not fear God's wrath because Jesus Christ has made peace between them and God by His death (cf. Col. 1:20; Eph. 2:14). Note that

---

<sup>1</sup>Charles R. Swindoll, *The Swindoll Study Bible*, p. 1384.

<sup>2</sup>Robertson, 4:354; Witmer, p. 456. See also Verlyn D. Verbrugge, "The Grammatical Internal Evidence for 'EXOMEN in Romans 5:1,'" *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 54:3 (September 2011):559-72.

<sup>3</sup>Harrison, p. 55.

<sup>4</sup>Barrett, pp. 101-2.

references to "peace" and "reconciliation" frame this pericope (section of text; vv. 1, 11).

"Peace and joy are twin blessings of the gospel: as an old preacher put it, 'peace is joy resting; joy is peace dancing.'"<sup>1</sup>

"Our peace with God is not as between two nations before at war; but as between a king and rebellious and guilty subjects."<sup>2</sup>

"It is well known that Romans lacks any extended christological discussion per se, but Paul's repeated insistence in these chapters [5—8] that all the believer experiences of God's blessings comes only through Christ develops a very significant christological focus in its own right. Christology, we might say, is not the topic of any part of Rom. 5—8, but it is the basis for everything in these chapters."<sup>3</sup>

5:2 The third benefit is access ("introduction," Gr. *prosagoge*). The idea here is that Jesus Christ enables us to enjoy a continuing relationship with God (cf. Eph. 2:17-18; 3:12). Paul spoke of "this grace in which we stand" as the realm into which Christ's redeeming work transfers us. To redeem means to free or release from the slavery or bondage of sin by the payment of a ransom price. Paul stressed the fact that our being in this state of grace is an act of God's grace. Our present position in relation to God is all from, or based on, grace, and our justification admits us into that position.

The last part of this verse focuses on that part of our reconciliation that we can look forward to with joyful confidence: "hope." Paul had in view the glory that we will experience when we stand in the Lord's presence. To reconcile means to remove enmity, making peace between enemies.

---

<sup>1</sup>Bruce, p. 114.

<sup>2</sup>Newell, p. 165.

<sup>3</sup>Moo, p. 300.

The Greek word *kauchometha*, translated "celebrate" here, is the same word translated "boast" earlier (cf. 2:17, 23; 3:27; 4:2). There it was used in a bad sense of selfish, boastful confidence. Here it means triumphant, rejoicing confidence.

5:3-4 The fourth benefit of justification is "hope." Peace with God does not always result in peace with other people. Nevertheless, the fact that we have peace with God and a harmonious relationship with Him, with assurance of standing accepted by Him in His presence, enables us to view present difficulties with joy. We can "celebrate" in tribulations because God has revealed that He uses them to produce steadfast endurance ("perseverance") and "proven character" in those who relate to their sufferings properly (cf. Job 23:10; James 1:2-4; Heb. 12).<sup>1</sup>

"Our English word 'tribulation' comes from a Latin word *tribulum*. In Paul's day, a *tribulum* was a heavy piece of timber with spikes in it, used for threshing the grain. The *tribulum* was drawn over the grain and it separated the wheat from the chaff."<sup>2</sup>

"The whole process produces hope because for Paul it is itself the process of salvation, the process whereby God recreates humanity in his own image ..."<sup>3</sup>

"The newborn child of God is precious in His sight, but the tested and proven saint means even more to Him because such a one is a living demonstration of the character-developing power of the gospel [cf. Job]. When we stand in the presence of God, all material possessions will have

---

<sup>1</sup>See Stanley D. Toussaint, "Suffering in Acts and the Pauline Epistles," in *Why, O God? Suffering and Disability in the Bible and Church*, pp. 189-90; Charles R. Swindoll, *Come before Winter*, "Persistence," pp. 138-40..

<sup>2</sup>Wiersbe, 1:527.

<sup>3</sup>Dunn, p. 265.

been left behind, but all that we have gained by way of spiritual advance will be retained."<sup>1</sup>

The quotation above helps us to see how "proven character" produces "hope." The hope of glorifying God with our proven characters when we see Him is in view. Our progress in character development will then testify to God's grace in our lives.

5:5 This hope, which is the focal point of this pericope, will not disappoint, "remaining unfulfilled when the hour for fulfillment arrives."<sup>2</sup> That is, because God loves us He enables us to withstand tribulations. He does this through His "Holy Spirit," whom He has given to indwell every justified sinner in the Church Age (cf. Acts 2:33; Rom. 8:9). Paul developed the Holy Spirit's ministry to the believer later (ch. 8). The fifth benefit of justification, therefore, is the indwelling Holy Spirit. Note the progression in these verses from faith (v. 1), to hope (vv. 2-5), to love (v. 5; cf. 1 Cor. 13:13).

"The confidence we have for the day of judgment is not based only on our intellectual recognition of the fact of God's love, or even only on the demonstration of God's love on the cross (although that is important; cf. vv. 6-8), but also on the inner, subjective certainty that God does love us."<sup>3</sup>

"God loves us [now] as He will love us in heaven."<sup>4</sup>

5:6 The depth of God's love (v. 5) becomes clearer in this verse and in those that follow (vv. 6-10). Four terms that are increasingly uncomplimentary describe those for whom Christ died. The first is "helpless." The idea expressed by the Greek word (*asthenon*) is that we were "incapable of working out any righteousness for ourselves."<sup>5</sup> At that very time Christ died for

---

<sup>1</sup>Harrison, p. 57.

<sup>2</sup>Lenski, p. 339.

<sup>3</sup>Moo, p. 304.

<sup>4</sup>J. N. Darby, *Synopsis of the Books of the Bible*, 4:417.

<sup>5</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 127.

us. "At the right time" refers to the fullness of time, the right time from God's perspective (cf. 3:26; 8:18; 13:11; Gal. 4:4).

The second term is "ungodly," which is a strong disparaging term as Paul used it (cf. 1:18; 4:5). Even though some people who are lost seek the things of God, everyone neglects God and rebels against God. This is ungodliness.

5:7 This verse prepares for the next one that contrasts with it. Paul used the word "righteous" here in the general sense of an upright person, not in the theological sense of a person made right with God by faith in Christ. People normally appreciate a righteous person more than an upright person. "Righteous" carries the idea of one who is not only upright but one who is loved for it, because he or she reaches out to help others.

5:8 The third term used to describe those for whom Christ died is "sinners" (cf. 3:23): those who are neither "righteous" nor "good" (v. 7). Paul here was contrasting the worth of the life laid down, Jesus Christ's life, and the unworthiness of those who benefit from His sacrifice. Whereas people may look at one another as meriting love, because they are righteous or good, God views them as sinners. Nevertheless God loves them. His provision of His own Son as their Savior demonstrated the depth of His love (John 3:16).

The preposition in the clause "Christ died for (*hyper*) us" stresses the substitute character of His sacrifice. It also highlights the fact that God in His "love" for us provided that sacrifice for our welfare.

5:9 So far Paul had referred to five benefits of justification. These blessings, in addition to justification itself, were peace with God (v. 1), access into a realm or condition in which God deals graciously with us (v. 2), joy in tribulations (vv. 3-5a), and the indwelling Holy Spirit (v. 5b). Still there is "much more" (cf. vv. 10, 15, 17, 20).

What Paul next described is a benefit that justified sinners will experience in the future, namely, deliverance from the outpouring of God's "wrath" on the unrighteous (cf. 1:18).

Jesus Christ's blood is both the symbol of His death and the literal expression of His life poured out as a sacrifice (cf. 3:25). Having done the harder thing, namely, justifying us when we were yet sinners (v. 8), how much more will He do the easier thing, namely, delivering us from coming wrath.

"No clearer passage can be quoted for distinguishing the spheres of justification and [progressive] sanctification than this verse and the next—the one an objective fact accomplished without us, the other a change operated within us. Both, though in different ways, proceed from Christ."<sup>1</sup>

5:10 "For" (Gr. *gar*) in this case means: Let me explain more fully.<sup>2</sup>

The fourth and worst term used to describe those for whom Christ died is "enemies." People are not only helpless to save themselves (v. 6), neglectful of God (v. 6), and wicked (v. 8), but they also set themselves against God and His purposes. Even though many unsaved people profess to love God, God, who knows their hearts, sees opposition to Himself in them. Their antagonism toward Him is the proof of their enmity.

Jesus Christ's death "reconciled" us to God (cf. 2 Cor. 5:18; Col. 1:21-22). The Scriptures always speak of man as being reconciled to God. They never speak of God as being reconciled to man.<sup>3</sup> God reconciles people to Himself (cf. 2 Cor. 5:18), He redeems them from sin (3:24; cf. Eph. 1:7), and He propitiates (satisfies) Himself (3:25; cf. 1 John 2:2; 4:10) —all through the death of His Son. Humankind has offended and departed from God and needs reconciliation into relationship with Him. It is people who have turned from God, not God who has turned from people.<sup>4</sup>

There are two aspects of reconciliation: one for all humankind (2 Cor. 5:19), and another for the believer (2 Cor. 5:20). Jesus

---

<sup>1</sup>Ibid., p. 129.

<sup>2</sup>Lenski, p. 351.

<sup>3</sup>Cf. Lightfoot, p. 284.

<sup>4</sup>See Lewis S. Chafer, *Systematic Theology*, 3:91-93.



Christ's death put humankind in a savable condition, but people still need to experience full reconciliation with God by believing in His Son.

"Justification and reconciliation are different metaphors describing the same fact. ... 'Reconciliation' evokes the picture of men acting as rebels against God their king, and making war upon him; 'justification' that of men who have offended against the law and are therefore arraigned before God their judge."<sup>1</sup>

Jesus Christ's death was responsible for our justification. His continuing life is responsible for our progressive sanctification and our glorification. The idea is not that what Christ now does for believers saves us now, but it is the fact that He is alive that saves us.<sup>2</sup> Because He lives we can experience sanctification and glorification as well as justification. Having done the harder thing for us, namely, delivering Christ to death in order to reconcile us to Himself, God will certainly do the easier thing: He will see that we share Christ's risen life forever.

Some expositors have concluded from Paul's statement that Christ must have died only for the elect, since he wrote that God will bestow eternal life on them, and only the elect receive eternal life.<sup>3</sup> I think Paul's point was that since Christ died for believers, He will certainly give believers eternal life, not that He died only for believers.

We experience continuing salvation (progressive sanctification) and ultimate salvation (glorification) because of Jesus Christ's ongoing life. These present and future aspects of our salvation were not the direct results of His death, but they are the consequences of His life after death and resurrection (cf. 6:8-13). We have salvation in the present and in the future because our Savior lives. He is still saving us. This verse shows that we are eternally secure.

---

<sup>1</sup>Barrett, p. 108.

<sup>2</sup>Alford, 2:2:359.

<sup>3</sup>E.g., Johnson, *Discovering Romans*, p. 83.

5:11 Jesus Christ's death reconciled us to God with the effect that one day in the future we will stand before Him complete (cf. vv. 5-10). However, we also enter into the benefits of that reconciliation now (cf. vv. 1-4). "This" probably refers to our future salvation, which is its closest antecedent. The seventh benefit of justification by faith is our present relationship with God made possible by Christ's reconciling work on the cross. We were saved by His death in the past, we will be saved by His life in the future, and we are presently enjoying a current saving relationship with God—all because of His work of "reconciliation."

In this section Paul identified the following benefits of justification by faith that every believer in Christ enjoys:

1. A right standing before God (v. 1)
2. Peace with God (v. 1)
3. Access into God's grace (having been under God's wrath (v. 2)
4. Hope of a glorious future (vv. 3-5a)
5. The indwelling Holy Spirit (v. 5b)
6. Deliverance from future condemnation (vv. 9-10)
7. Reconciliation with God (v. 11)

This section of the argument of the book should help any reader realize that justification by faith is a safe method of salvation. It is the doorway that leads into many blessings that obedience to the Law could never guarantee.

"Totally apart from Law, and purely by grace, we have a salvation that takes care of the past, the present, and the future. Christ died for us; Christ lives for us; Christ is coming for us! Hallelujah, what a Savior!"<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Wiersbe, 1:528.

### E. THE RESTORATIVE EFFECTS OF JUSTIFICATION 5:12-21

"This paragraph is evidently intended as a conclusion to the whole opening section (1:18—5:21)."<sup>1</sup>

Justification by faith not only carries with it many benefits (vv. 1-11), but it also overcomes the effects of the Fall. Paul's final argument in support of justification by faith involves a development of his previous emphasis on the solidarity that the saved person experiences with the Savior (5:1-2, 9-10). In this section (5:12-21) he expanded that idea by showing that, just as Adam's sin has affected all people, so Jesus Christ's obedience has affected all those who believe in Him (are justified by faith).

"As Adam's one sin never fails to bring death, so Christ's one righteous act in behalf of sinners never fails to bring the opposite award to those who are in Him."<sup>2</sup>

"There are three great acts of imputation in the Bible. First, Scripture teaches the imputation of Adam's sin to his posterity, or to the whole human race (cf. 1 Cor. 15:21-22). Second, there is the imputation of the sin of the elect to Jesus Christ, who bore that sin's penalty in his death on the cross (cf. 2 Cor. 5:21; Gal. 3:13). Third, there is the imputation of the righteousness of God to the elect (cf. Rom. 3:24-26; 4:1-8). It is to the first of these imputations that the passage in Romans 5:12 [and vv. 13-21] refers."<sup>3</sup>

The apostle Paul viewed Adam and Christ as heads of two groups of people: all human beings, and believers, respectively. In this section of his epistle Paul was not looking primarily at what individual sinners have done, which had been his interest previously. Rather he was looking at what Adam did in the Fall and what Jesus Christ did at the Cross—and the consequences of their actions for humanity.<sup>4</sup> Adam's act resulted in his descendants sinning and dying. All people are sinners not only because we commit acts of sin, but also because Adam's sin corrupted the human race and made sin and punishment inevitable for his descendants, as well as for himself.

---

<sup>1</sup>Dunn, p. 271.

<sup>2</sup>Stifler, p. 95.

<sup>3</sup>Johnson, *Discovering Romans*, p. 85.

<sup>4</sup>Dunn, p. 288.

However Christ's act of dying made all who trust in Him righteous apart from their own works.

There are two ways that Adam's sin has been passed on to all of his descendants. Adam was the head of the human race in two ways: naturally, and federally. The first way is that sin has been handed down to us by our parents. Just as they are the human sources of our bodies (our material part) they are the human source of our souls (our immaterial part). Thus we inherit our sinful human nature from our parents.

The second way that all people have become sinners is that, as members of the human race, we participate in the action of the head of the race, Adam, our federal head. As the head of the human race, what Adam did affects all of his descendants—like the decisions of the president of a country affect everyone who is a citizen of that country. For example, if the president of a country decides to place his country under the authority of another ruler, all of the citizens of his country fall under the authority of that new ruler. As federal head of the human race Adam acted as the representative of every one of his descendants, and his actions resulted in consequences that those he represents inevitably experience. Thus Adam's sin has been imputed to us.

So, to summarize, people are sinners for three reasons: we have all committed acts of sin (in thought, word, and deed, by commission as well as by omission), we inherited a sinful human nature from our parents, and we are the descendants of Adam who made a decision in the Garden of Eden that has resulted in all of his descendants being sinners.

"When one man fails in the accomplishment of God's purpose (as, in measure, all did), God raises up another to take his place—Joshua to replace Moses, David to replace Saul, Elisha to replace Elijah[, Jesus to replace Adam]."<sup>1</sup>

"Starting with himself and the Romans in v. 6-11, Paul in v. 12-21 sweeps through the world age, from Adam to the last day, from one border of eternity to the other, Christ being in the center. This is theology, indeed."<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Bruce, p. 119.

<sup>2</sup>Lenski, p. 357.

"The power of Christ's act of obedience to overcome Adam's act of disobedience is the great theme of this paragraph."<sup>1</sup>

"The main connection is with the teaching of assurance of final salvation in the immediately preceding paragraph (vv. 2b, 9-10). The passage shows why those who have been justified and reconciled can be so certain that they will be saved from wrath and share in 'the glory of God': it is because Christ's act of obedience ensures eternal life for all those who are 'in Christ.'"<sup>2</sup>

5:12 This verse picks up the idea of future salvation from verses 9 and 10. "Therefore" is transitional and indicates a loose relation between what has gone before and what follows.<sup>3</sup>

Paul did not call Adam and Christ by name in this passage when he first spoke of them but referred to each as "one man." The key word "one" occurs 14 times in verses 12 through 21. Paul thereby stressed the unity of each head with those under him, who are also men (i.e., human beings).

If we did not continue reading we might interpret this verse as meaning that Adam only set a bad example for humankind that everyone has followed. However Adam's sin had a more direct and powerful effect than simply that of a bad example (v. 15). It resulted in his descendants being born sinners, which accounts in large part for our sinfulness. It resulted in our being born in a state of sinfulness.

My ancestors on my father's side emigrated to the United States from Great Britain, and my ancestors on my mother's side came to the U.S. from Switzerland. Their decision to move to the United States resulted in my being born in the U.S.A. Just so, Adam's decision to move into a state of sin resulted in all of his descendants being born in a state of sin.

Paul personified sin ("sin entered the world"), presenting it as an evil power. He probably meant physical death, rather than

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 315.

<sup>2</sup>Ibid., p. 316.

<sup>3</sup>Barrett, p. 110.

spiritual death or eternal death, in this reference to the effect of sin ("and death through sin").

Why did Paul (and God) hold Adam responsible for the sinfulness of the race when it was really Eve who sinned first? They did so because Adam was the person in authority over, and therefore responsible for, Eve (Gen. 2:18-23; 1 Cor. 11:3). Furthermore, Eve was deceived (2 Cor. 11:3), but Adam sinned fully aware of the fact that what he was doing was wrong (1 Tim. 2:14).

Paul compared the manner in which death entered the world, through sin, with the manner in which it spread to everyone, also through sin. Death is universal because sin is universal. Paul's concern here was more with original death ("death spread to all mankind") than with original sin.

"Death, then, is due *immediately* to the sinning of each individual but *ultimately* to the sin of Adam; for it was Adam's sin that corrupted human nature and made individual sinning an inevitability."<sup>1</sup>

John Witmer compared Adam's sin to a vapor that entered a house (humanity) through the front door and then penetrated the whole house.<sup>2</sup> It was a deadly vapor.

"Perhaps what makes this sermon ["Sinners in the Hands of an Angry God," by Jonathan Edwards] most offensive to the ears of contemporary interpreters is not the language of impending destruction nor even that God is angry. What is probably most distasteful in Edwards's theology is the doctrine of original sin, that he would believe that human beings are born guilty of sin and deserving of divine wrath. Perhaps implicitly, the view of the universal goodness of humanity that permeates the worldview of many people today has also penetrated evangelical theology as well.

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 325. Italics added. See also Alford, 2:2:360.

<sup>2</sup>Witmer, p. 458.

That all humans, including children, are guilty of sin and therefore deserving of the wrath of God seems harsh and unfair to modern ears."<sup>1</sup>

"... nothing evinces [reveals] the sin of all and the death of all in the sin of Adam more than the death of little infants."<sup>2</sup>

The term "original sin" refers to the fact that people are born sinners. Scripture reveals that we are born sinners in two ways: We inherited a sinful nature from our parents, and Adam's sin was imputed directly to us because we are members of his race.<sup>3</sup>

"In general Pelagians differed from Augustine in denying that the taint of Adam's sin and the impairment of the will brought by it have been transmitted to all Adam's descendants, but, in contrast, declared that each man at birth has the ability to choose the good. In other words, they denounced 'original sin.'"<sup>4</sup>

Dunn warned against using this verse as a proof of the historicity of Adam.<sup>5</sup> But Barrett believed that Paul accepted Genesis 1 through 3 "as a straightforward narrative of events which really happened."<sup>6</sup> I agree with Barrett.

5:13-14 Paul did not carry through the comparison that he began in verse 12 here. If he had, verse 13 would have read something like this: so righteousness entered the world by one man and life through righteousness. Evidently Paul broke off his statement because he wanted to explain the relationship between sin and the Law, specifically why there was death

---

<sup>1</sup>Glenn R. Kreider, "Sinners in the Hands of a Gracious God," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 163:651 (July-September 2006):274.

<sup>2</sup>John Murray, *The Epistle to the Romans*, 1:190.

<sup>3</sup>See Enns, pp. 311-13, for four views of the imputation of sin: the Pelagian, Arminian, Federal, and Augustinian.

<sup>4</sup>Kenneth Scott Latourette, *A History of Christianity*, p. 181.

<sup>5</sup>Dunn, pp. 289-90.

<sup>6</sup>Barrett, p. 111.

before the Law. Verses 13 and 14 explain verse 12. He returned to the thought that he began in verse 12 in verse 18.

People died before God gave the Mosaic Law. If there is no law, there can be no transgression of law (cf. 3:20). Since death is the penalty for transgression of law, why did those people die? The answer is that they died because they sinned in Adam. Adam transgressed God's moral law in the Garden of Eden, and ever since then his descendants have transgressed God's moral law, not just the Mosaic Law, because they lived in a state of sin. This accounts for the universality of physical death. Moral law is an absolute principle, established by God or reason, that defines right and wrong.

Verses 12 through 14 describe imputed sin, not inherited sin. In the case of *inherited* sin, Adam's sin is passed on from one generation to the next, from parents to children—because of Adam's *natural* headship of the human race (cf. Eph. 2:3). In the case of *imputed* sin, Adam's sin is passed on directly from Adam to each individual—because of Adam's *federal* headship of the human race. Ryrie offered the following chart that compares the ways that all human beings are sinners:<sup>1</sup>

Aspect	Scripture	Transmission	Principal consequence	Remedy
Inherited sin	Eph. 2:3	Generation to generation	Spiritual death	Redemption and the gift of the Holy Spirit
Imputed sin	Rom. 5:12	Direct from Adam to me	Physical death	Imputed righteousness
Personal sins	Rom. 3:23 1 John 1:9	None	Loss of fellowship	Forgiveness

The idea that people should involuntarily suffer punishment because of the sin of another person is naturally repugnant to us. Nevertheless, as the head of the human race, Adam's

<sup>1</sup>Ryrie, *Basic Theology*, p. 229.



action resulted in consequences that his descendants had to bear. Likewise any representative leader's decisions result in consequences that his or her followers must bear. For example, when our president decides to sign some piece of legislation into law, it becomes binding on everyone under his authority—whether we like it or not.

It is just one of the facts of life that we all suffer the consequences of the decisions of those who have preceded us or are over us in authority (cf. Heb. 7:9-10). Some of those consequences are good for us, and others are bad for us. Some people rebel against God because of this universal punishment (death). However God has promised everyone life (eternal life) beyond death if they will trust in His Son (2 Cor. 5:19). He has provided a way for us to secure this salvation by sending Jesus Christ to pay the penalty for our sins.

It is the punishment for Adam's sin that we bear, not its guilt. We are guilty because we sin, but we die physically (the punishment for sin) because Adam sinned. Christ bore the punishment of our sins, not our guilt. He died in our place and for us. We are still guilty, but God will not condemn us for being guilty, because He has declared us righteous in Christ (i.e., has justified us). Guilt is both objective and subjective. We are objectively guilty, but we should feel no subjective guilt because we have been justified (declared righteous). The Christian can say: I am a guilty sinner, but God is not holding me guilty, because Christ has paid the penalty for my sin, and God has declared that I am now righteous in His sight.

"Every little white coffin,—yea, every coffin, should remind us of the universal effect of that sin of Adam, for it was thus and thus only that 'death passed to all men.'"<sup>1</sup>

Most evangelicals believe that infants and people who are incapable of understanding die physically because of Adam's sin, but they do not die eternally (are unsaved) because they are incapable of exercising saving faith in Christ. Therefore,

---

<sup>1</sup>Newell, p. 183.

since God is just, He will have mercy on them (cf. Gen. 18:25).<sup>1</sup> Some people base their belief in the salvation of such people on 2 Samuel 12:23, but that verse probably only means that David anticipated going into the grave (Sheol), where his infant son had gone, not going to heaven.

Adam was a "type" (Gr. *typos*) or foreshadowing of one who would follow him, namely, Jesus Christ. A type is a divinely intended illustration of something else: the antitype. A type may be a person, as here, or a thing (cf. Heb. 10:19-20), an event (cf. 1 Cor. 10:11), a ceremony (cf. 1 Cor. 5:7), or an institution (cf. Heb. 9:11-12). Adam is the only Old Testament character who is explicitly identified as a type of Christ in the New Testament. Adam's act had universal impact and prefigured Christ's act, which also had universal impact. The point of similarity between Adam and Christ is that what each did resulted in a significant change. Each communicated what belonged to him (his legacy) to those that he represented. Also, each of their acts affected every human being: Adam's act made all people sinners, and Christ's act made all people saveable.

"Adam came from the earth, but Jesus is the Lord from heaven (1 Cor. 15:47). Adam was tested in a Garden, surrounded by beauty and love; Jesus was tempted in a wilderness, and He died on a cruel cross surrounded by hatred and ugliness. Adam was a thief, and was cast out of Paradise; but Jesus Christ turned to a thief and said, 'Today shalt thou be with Me in Paradise' (Luke 23:43). The Old Testament is 'the book of the generations of Adam' (Gen. 5:1) and it ends with 'a curse' (Mal. 4:6). The New Testament is 'The book of the generation of Jesus Christ' (Matt. 1:1) and it ends with 'no more curse' (Rev. 22:3)."<sup>2</sup>

The rest of this chapter develops seven contrasts (one per verse) between Adam's act of sin and Christ's act of salvation. As Adam's act of sin

---

<sup>1</sup>See Robertson, 4:358-59. See Gleason L. Archer, *Encyclopedia of Bible Difficulties*, pp. 338-90, for discussion of this issue.

<sup>2</sup>Wiersbe, 1:530.

resulted in inevitable physical death for all his descendants, so Christ's act of obedience resulted in inevitable eternal life for all who believe in Him.

5:15 In this verse the essences of Adam's act and Christ's act are contrasted, namely, an "offense" and a "gracious gift."

Paul probably used the phrase "the many" in order to contrast those individuals in each group with Adam or Christ, who were individuals (cf. Isa. 53:11-12; Mark 10:45). "Many" is a comparative word, and it can compare many with all, or with one, or with a few. In the case of Adam, "the many" means all people, but in the case of Christ, "the many" means all who receive the benefit of His saving act by faith, namely, all believers.<sup>1</sup>

"... the benefits of Christ's obedience extend to all men potentially. It is only human self-will which places limits to its operation."<sup>2</sup>

The effect of Jesus Christ's act on people was totally different from that of Adam's act, and it was vastly superior to it, as "much more" indicates (cf. vv. 9, 10, 17, 20). "Much more" here shows that Jesus Christ did not only cancel the effects of Adam's sin, but He provided more than Adam lost, or even possessed, before the Fall, namely, the righteousness of God.

5:16 In Adam's case, a single sin by a single individual was sufficient to bring condemnation to the whole human race. In Christ's case, one act of obedience, which the transgressions of many people made necessary, was sufficient to bring justification to all those who believe in Him. Here the divine verdicts, following Adam's act and Christ's act, are in view: "condemnation" and "justification."

5:17 The consequence of Adam's sin was death reigning over humankind. The consequence of Christ's obedience was humankind reigning over death (v. 17). This implies the believer's ultimate resurrection and participation in Jesus Christ's reign, as well as his or her reigning (triumphing) over

---

<sup>1</sup>Dunn, pp. 293-94.

<sup>2</sup>Lightfoot, p. 291.

death in this life. "Death" and "life" are the contrasting consequences of Adam's act and Christ's act.

"That we are to reign in life involves much more than participation in eternal life; it indicates the activity of life in fellowship with Christ [now] in His Kingdom."<sup>1</sup>

5:18 This verse and the next three summarize Paul's point, as indicated by "So then." They also complete the thought that Paul broke off at the end of verse 12. Paul contrasted the extents of Adam's act and Christ's act: "condemnation" came upon all people, and "justification" came upon all people who believe in Christ.

There are really three reasons why all human beings, except Christ, are guilty before God: First, God imputed Adam's guilt to each of his descendants. This is called "original sin." This is a *legal* matter. Just as children who are born in any given country are automatically governed by conditions that the country's forefathers set in motion, so people who are born in Adam's race automatically fall under conditions that Adam set in motion. Second, every human being is born with a human nature that has been defiled by sin. This is called our "sin (or sinful human) nature." This is an *inheritance* matter (cf. Ps. 51:5). Third, every person commits acts of sin. This is "personal sin." This is an *individual* matter (cf. Rom. 3:23).

"In general, it may be said that the New Testament teaching concerning original sin and its consequences finds no analogy in the Rabbinical writings of that period. As to the mode of salvation, their doctrine may be broadly summed up under the designation of work-righteousness."<sup>2</sup>

"There is nothing about which the natural man is more blind than about original corruption."<sup>3</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Vine, p. 82.

<sup>2</sup>Alfred Edersheim, *Sketches of Jewish Social Life in the Days of Christ*, p. 177.

<sup>3</sup>Henry, p. 1769.

5:19 Here the contrast is between the issues involved in Adam's act and in Christ's act. Adam disobeyed God, and Christ obeyed God. Many will be made righteous both forensically (justified), when they believe, and finally (glorified), after they believe. "The many" here, of course, means the justified. Obviously these verses do not mean that everyone will be justified. The obedience of Christ is a reference to His death as the ultimate act of His obedience, rather than to His life of obedience—since it is His death that saves us.

"There is no more direct statement in Scripture concerning justification than we find in verse 19 ..."<sup>1</sup>

5:20 One of the purposes of the Mosaic Law was to illuminate the sinfulness of people. It did so by exposing behavior that was until then not obviously contrary to God's will. God gave the Law to prove man's sinfulness to him, as well as for other reasons.

"It [the Law] does not create, but it evokes [makes us aware of] sin."<sup>2</sup>

"The fact and power of 'sin' introduced into the world by Adam has not been decreased by the law, but given a new dimension as rebellion against the revealed, detailed will of God; sin has become 'transgression' ..."<sup>3</sup>

"['The offense'] seems expressly chosen in order to remind us that all sins done in defiance of a definite command are as such repetitions of the sin of Adam."<sup>4</sup>

Paul's statement "the Law came in so that" can be understood as both a purpose clause and a result clause.<sup>5</sup> However, when

---

<sup>1</sup>Newell, p. 178.

<sup>2</sup>Lightfoot, p. 293.

<sup>3</sup>Moo, p. 348. Cf. 7:13; Gal. 3:19.

<sup>4</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 143.

<sup>5</sup>Witmer, p. 460.

God provided Jesus Christ, He provided "grace" (undeserved favor) that far exceeded the "sin" that He exposed when He provided the Law. We could translate "abounded": super-abounded, or abounded more exceedingly (Gr. *hupereperisseusen*).

"The apostle waxes almost ecstatic as he revels in the superlative excellence of the divine overruling that makes sin serve a gracious purpose."<sup>1</sup>

The contrast in this verse deals with the significances of Adam's act and Christ's act. The Law showed the significance of Adam's sin more clearly, and God's provision of Christ showed the significance of God's grace more clearly.

5:21 This verse is the grand conclusion of the argument in this section (5:12-21). It brings together the main concepts of "sin" and "death," and "righteousness and "eternal life." Paul effectively played down Adam and exalted Jesus Christ. Here Paul contrasted the dominions of Adam's act and Christ's act: sin reigning in death and grace reigning to eternal life.

"Paul often thinks in terms of 'spheres' or 'dominions,' and the language of 'reigning' is particularly well suited to this idea. Death has its own dominion: humanity as determined, and dominated, by Adam. And in this dominion, sin is in control. But those who 'receive the gift' (v. 17) enjoy a transfer from this domain to another, the domain of righteousness, in which grace reigns and where life is the eventual outcome."<sup>2</sup>

"The greater the strength of the enemy, the greater the honour of the conqueror."<sup>3</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Harrison, p. 65.

<sup>2</sup>Moo, p. 350.

<sup>3</sup>Henry, p. 1766.

CONTRASTS IN ROMANS 5:12-21 <sup>1</sup>		
Two men	Adam (v. 14)	Christ (v. 14)
Two acts	One sinful act in the garden (vv. 12, 15, 17, 18, 19)	One righteous act on the cross (v. 18)
Two results	Condemnation, guilt, and death (vv. 15, 16, 18, 19)	Justification, life, and rulership (vv. 17, 18, 19)
Two differences		
• In degree (v. 15)	Sin abounds	Grace super-abounds
• In operation (v. 16)	One sin by Adam resulting in condemnation and the reign of death for everyone	Many sins on Christ resulting in justification and reigning in life for believers
Two kings	Sin reigning through death (v. 17)	Grace reigning through righteousness (v. 21)
Two abundances		Of grace (v. 17) Of the gift of righteousness (v. 17)
Two contrasting states	Condemned people slaves of sin by Adam	Justified people reigning in life by Christ

This section of Romans (5:12-21) shows that humankind is guilty before God because all of Adam's descendants are sinners due to Adam's sin. Both personal sins and the sinful human nature are consequences of Adam's sin. Earlier Paul wrote that we are all guilty because we have all committed acts

<sup>1</sup>Adapted from Newell, p. 176. See also the chart in *The Bible Knowledge Commentary: New Testament*, p. 461.

of sin (chs. 3—4). Ultimately, we sin and die because Adam sinned and died. Jesus Christ's death has righteously removed both causes for condemnation: judgment for our sins and punishment for Adam's sin. This section stresses the believer's union with Christ, which Paul proceeded to explain further in chapter 6.

#### **IV. THE IMPARTATION OF GOD'S RIGHTEOUSNESS CHS. 6—8**

The apostle moved on from questions about why people need salvation (1:18—3:20), what God has done to provide it, and how we can appropriate it (3:21—5:21). He next explained that salvation involves more than a right standing before God, which justification affords. God also provides salvation from the present power of sin in the redeemed sinner's daily experience. This is progressive sanctification (chs. 6—8). (Some expositors regard 5:12-21 as explaining "potential sanctification."<sup>1</sup>)

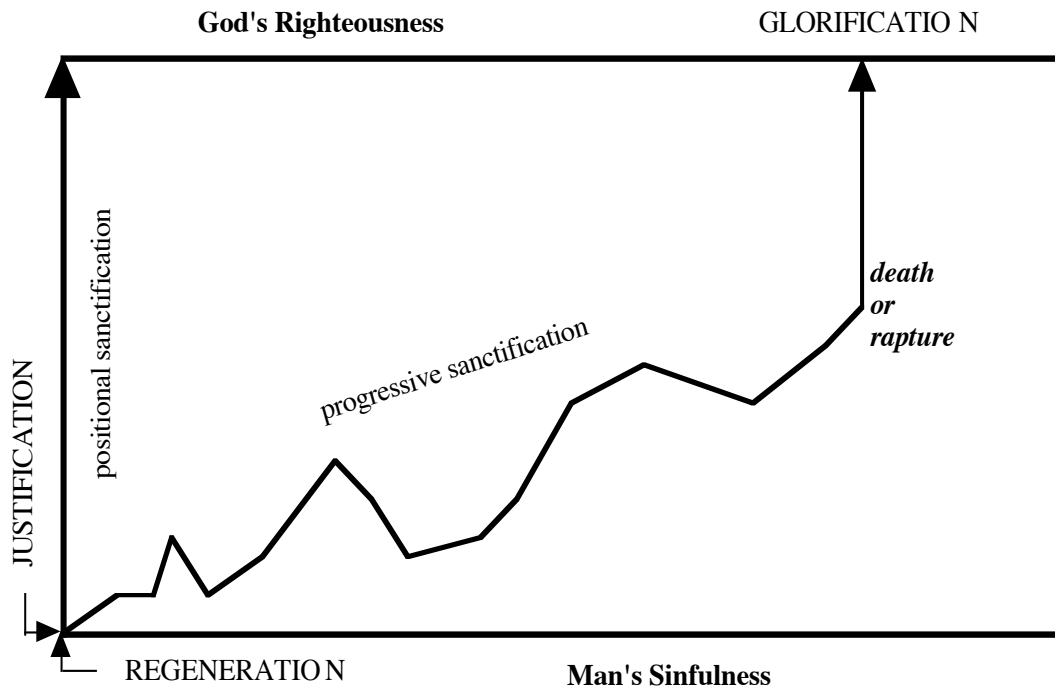
When a sinner experiences redemption—"conversion" is the subjective term—he or she simultaneously experiences justification. Justification imputes God's righteousness to him or her. Justification is the same thing as "positional sanctification." This term means that God views the believer as completely holy in his or her standing before God. Consequently, that person is no longer regarded as guilty because of his or her sins (cf. 8:1; 1 Cor. 1:2; 6:11).

---

<sup>1</sup>E.g., McGee, 4:677.



## SALVATION



When a sinner experiences redemption, he or she begins a process of progressive practical sanctification. This process of becoming progressively more righteous (holy) in his or her daily experience is not automatic. It involves growth and requires the believer to cooperate with God in order to produce holiness in daily life. God leads the believer and provides the motivation and enablement for him or her to follow, but the believer must choose to follow and must make use of the resources for sanctification that God provides.<sup>1</sup> Our progressive sanctification will end at death or the Rapture, whichever occurs first. Then the believer will experience glorification. Then his experiential condition will finally conform to his legal standing before God. He or she will then be completely righteous as well as having been declared righteous. God will remove our sinful nature and will conform our lives fully to His will (8:29).

"Justification is *for* us; sanctification is *in* us. Justification *declares* the sinner righteous; sanctification *makes* the sinner righteous. Justification removes the *guilt* and *penalty* of sin; sanctification removes the *growth* and the *power* of sin."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup>See Ryrie, *So Great ...*, pp. 152-54.

<sup>2</sup>McGee, 4:681.

In chapters 6 through 8 Paul explained how justified sinners can become more holy (godly, righteous) in daily living before our glorification. We need to understand our relationship as believers to sin (i.e., victory, ch. 6), to the Law (i.e., liberty, ch. 7), and to God (i.e., security, ch. 8) in order to attain that worthy goal.

"... the fundamental thought is that the believer is united to Christ. This new principle makes him dead to sin (ch. vi.); but it also provides a new power which enables him to be free from law (ch. vii.); and still more, it includes a new possibility, for in the gift of the Holy Spirit there is a new position for holiness (ch. viii.)."<sup>1</sup>

#### **A. THE BELIEVER'S RELATIONSHIP TO SIN CH. 6**

"Up to chapter 6, Paul does not discuss the *holy life* of the saint. From chapter 6 on, Paul does not discuss the salvation [i.e., justification] of the sinner."<sup>2</sup>

"Subduing the power of sin is the topic of Rom. 6."<sup>3</sup>

#### **1. Freedom from sin 6:1-14**

Paul began his explanation of the believer's relationship to sin by explaining the implications of our union with Christ (6:1-14). He had already spoken of this in 5:12 through 21 regarding justification, but now he showed how that union affects our progressive sanctification.

"Justification brings us from the tomb; sanctification delivers us from the old 'threads' of the unbelieving life."<sup>4</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Griffith Thomas, *St. Paul's Epistle ...*, p. 164.

<sup>2</sup>McGee, 4:681.

<sup>3</sup>Moo, p. 350.

<sup>4</sup>Johnson, *Discovering Romans*, p. 98.

"The focus of his discussion, particularly in chapter 6, is not on how to obey God and avoid sinning, but on why we should obey God."<sup>1</sup>

The apostle referred to Jesus Christ's death, burial, and resurrection in this section of chapter 6. Seen from the viewpoint of His substitute sacrifice, these events did not involve the believer's participation. Jesus Christ alone endured the cross, experienced burial, and rose from the grave. Nevertheless His work of redemption was not only substitutionary but also representative. It is in this respect that Paul described believers as identified with Christ in His death, burial, and resurrection in the following verses. Paul previously introduced the concept of Adam and Christ as our representatives in 5:12 through 21 (cf. 2 Cor. 5:14). Sin has no further claim on Christ because He paid the penalty for sin. Sin no longer has a claim on us because He died as our representative. We are free from sin's domination because of our union with Him. This was Paul's line of thought, and it obviously develops further what Paul wrote in 5:12 through 21.

"In ch. 6 there are four key words which indicate the believer's personal responsibility in relation to God's sanctifying work: (1) to 'know' the facts of our union and identification with Christ in His death and resurrection (vv. 3, 6, 9); to 'reckon' or count these facts to be true concerning ourselves (v. 11); to 'yield,' or present ourselves once for all as alive from the dead for God's possession and use (vv. 13, 16, 19); and (4) to 'obey' in the realization that sanctification can proceed only as we are obedient to the will of God as revealed in His Word (vv. 16-17)."<sup>2</sup>

6:1 One writer counted 74 rhetorical questions in Romans.<sup>3</sup> This chapter begins with one of them. Paul had just said that grace super-abounded where sin increased (5:20). Perhaps then believers should not worry about practicing sin, since it results in the demonstration of more of God's grace and His greater glory (cf. 3:8). One expression of this view is Voltaire's famous

---

<sup>1</sup>Robert A. Pyne, "Dependence and Duty: The Spiritual Life in Galatians 5 and Romans 6," in *Integrity of Heart, Skillfulness of Hands*, p. 149.

<sup>2</sup>*The New Scofield Reference Bible*, p. 1217.

<sup>3</sup>B. Kaye, *The Argument of Romans with Special Reference to Chapter 6*, p. 14.

statement: "God will forgive; that is his 'business.'"<sup>1</sup> W. H. Auden voiced similar sentiments:

"I like committing crimes. God likes forgiving them. Really the world is admirably arranged."<sup>2</sup>

Paul probably posed the question in order to draw out the implications of God's grace ("Are we to continue in sin so that grace may increase?").

"... justification by faith is not simply a legal matter between me and God; it is a living relationship."<sup>3</sup>

6:2 Paul answered his own question: "Far from It!" It is illogical and wicked to conclude that those who have died in relation to sin should continue to live in sin. Paul described sin as having a ruling power or realm ("How shall we ... live in it?"). We died to sin through Christ when we experienced conversion.

"How despicable it would be for a son or a daughter to consider himself or herself free to sin, because he or she knew that a father or a mother would forgive."<sup>4</sup>

Note that Paul did not say that it is impossible to live in sin, or that sin is dead to the Christian (i.e., that it no longer appeals to us). He meant that it is unnecessary and undesirable to live in sin, to habitually practice it.

For example, if a man's wife died it would be unrealistic for him to continue living as though she were alive. Her death changed his relationship to her. He could, of course, continue to live as though she were alive, but such a man no longer needs to do so, and he should not do so.

---

<sup>1</sup>Cited by Moo, p. 356.

<sup>2</sup>W. H. Auden, *For the Time Being*, p. 116.

<sup>3</sup>Wiersbe, 1:531.

<sup>4</sup>Barclay, p. 86.

It is incredible that one advocate of Lordship Salvation wrote the following:

"What is no-lordship theology but the teaching that those who have died to sin can indeed live in it?"<sup>1</sup>

This expositor caricatured those of us who believe in salvation by faith alone as "no-lordship" advocates, implying that we do not believe in the Lordship of Christ. We do believe in it, but we do not believe that submitting to Jesus Christ's mastery over every area of our lives, or even being willing to do so, is a biblical condition for obtaining salvation (cf. 6:23; John 3:16; Eph. 2:8-9; et al.). Romans 6:13 and 12:1 and 2 are three of the clearest verses in the Bible that submission to the Lordship of Christ is the duty of every Christian. It is not optional or unimportant, but it is a command addressed to Christians, not to unbelievers.

Matthew Henry described the nature of sanctification as twofold: mortification ("How shall we who died to sin still live in it?" v. 2) and vivification ("walk in newness of life," v. 4).<sup>2</sup>

6:3-4 Our baptism "into [with respect to] Christ Jesus" resulted in our death to sin.

"It appears that Paul had both the literal and figurative in mind in this paragraph, for he used the readers' experience of water baptism to remind them of their identification with Christ through the baptism of the Holy Spirit."<sup>3</sup>

"Baptism ... functions as shorthand for the conversion experience as a whole."<sup>4</sup>

Water baptism for the early Christians was an initiation into Christian living. Ritual (water) baptism joins the believer with

---

<sup>1</sup>MacArthur, p. 106.

<sup>2</sup>Henry, p. 1766.

<sup>3</sup>Wiersbe, 1:531.

<sup>4</sup>Moo, p. 355.

Jesus Christ by public profession. Real (Holy Spirit) baptism joins him or her with Christ in His death, burial, and resurrection.

"... there is no evidence in Rom. 6, or in the NT elsewhere, that the actual physical movements—immersion and emersion—involved in baptism were accorded symbolical significance. The focus in Rom. 6, certainly, is not on the *ritual* of baptism, but the simple *event* of baptism."<sup>1</sup>

"'Burial with Christ' is a description of the participation of the believer in Christ's own burial, a participation that is mediated by baptism."<sup>2</sup>

"It is not that the believer in baptism is laid in his own grave, but that through that action he is set alongside Christ Jesus in *his*."<sup>3</sup>

"... baptism is introduced not to explain *how* we were buried with Christ but to demonstrate *that* we were buried with Christ."<sup>4</sup>

"From this and other references to baptism in Paul's writings, it is plain that he did not regard [ritual] baptism as an 'optional extra' in the Christian life."<sup>5</sup>

Neither did Paul regard it as essential for salvation (e.g., 1 Cor. 1:17). Jesus' burial was not part of His saving work. It was simply the result of His death, and it proved that He had died (1 Cor. 15:3-4). Similarly His resurrection was not part of His saving work. It proved that death could not hold Him because He was sinless (cf. Acts 2:24).

---

<sup>1</sup>Ibid., p. 362.

<sup>2</sup>Ibid., p. 363.

<sup>3</sup>G. R. Beasley-Murray, *Baptism in the New Testament*, p. 130.

<sup>4</sup>Moo, p. 364. See his excursus on Paul's "with Christ" concept on pages 391-95.

<sup>5</sup>Bruce, p. 128.

Some good expositors see no reference to water baptism in this verse but only Spirit baptism.<sup>1</sup>

God not only raised Jesus Christ, but He also imparts "newness of life" to believers. Walking in newness (a new kind) of life shows outwardly that the believer has received new life (cf. 2 Cor. 5:17). "Glory" in this verse has power in view (cf. John 11:40).

"Walk by new rules. Make a new choice of the way. Choose new paths to walk in, new leaders to walk after, new companions to walk with."<sup>2</sup>

6:5 In this verse Paul apparently referred to our physical resurrection, in view of what follows. He was speaking of the Christian's bodily resurrection at a future date, rather than the believer's resurrection to a new type of life with Christ (cf. Eph. 2:6; Col. 2:12; 3:1). This is parallel to what he said about our death in the context.

We could paraphrase "united" as "fused together." The Greek word (*sumphytoi*) means "grown together." Our union with Christ in His death and resurrection is the basis for our future resurrection.

6:6 As we sinned in Adam, so we died with Christ (cf. Gal. 2:20). Paul said it is important that we know this, because it is crucial to understanding our relationship to sin as believers.

"Christian living depends on Christian learning; duty is always founded on doctrine. If Satan can keep a Christian ignorant, he can keep him impotent."<sup>3</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>E.g., McGee, 4:682.

<sup>2</sup>Henry, p. 1766.

<sup>3</sup>Wiersbe, 1:530.

"Satan's great device is to drive earnest souls back to beseeching God for what God says has already been done!"<sup>1</sup>

Our old "man" or "self" refers to the person we were before we experienced justification. That person was crucified with Christ (cf. Col. 3:9). That person is now dead; he no longer exists as he once was. Nevertheless we can adopt his or her old characteristics if we choose to do so (cf. Eph. 4:22). The believer is not the same person he or she used to be before justification (cf. 2 Cor. 5:17).

The "old self" (person, Gr. *anthropos*) is not the same as the old nature.<sup>2</sup> The old nature refers to our sinful human nature that every human being possesses as long as he or she lives. The old nature is the same as "the flesh" (cf. 7:5). The old self is the person I was before I experienced regeneration.

"'The flesh,' which is sin entrenched in the body [i.e., the sinful human nature], is unchangeably evil, and will war against us till Christ comes. Only the Holy Spirit has power over 'the flesh' (Chapter 8.1)."<sup>3</sup>

Even though "the old self" has died, the old nature lives on. I am not the same person I was before justification because sin no longer can dominate me, but I still have a sinful human nature. Human nature has been defined as "the fundamental tendencies and feelings of mankind."<sup>4</sup>

I prefer not to use the term "new nature" because it does not appear in Scripture. The New Testament does not present the Christian as a person with two natures warring within him or her. Rather it presents the Christian as a person with one sinful nature (the flesh) that is in conflict with the indwelling Holy Spirit (cf. Gal. 5:16-23). It also speaks of the Christian as

---

<sup>1</sup>Newell, p. 213.

<sup>2</sup>See John R. W. Stott, *Men Made New: An Exposition of Romans 5—8*, p. 45.

<sup>3</sup>Newell, p. 212. See I. Howard Marshall, "Living in the 'Flesh'," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 159:636 (October-December 2002):387-403, for an excellent word study of "flesh."

<sup>4</sup>Will and Ariel Durant, *The Lessons of History*, p. 31.



struggling with the decision to live as the new person (self) that he or she now is, or to live like the old self, who we were, but are no longer (cf. Rom. 7:13-24).

"What we *were* 'in Adam' is no more; but, until heaven, the temptation to *live* in Adam always remains."<sup>1</sup>

"Our body of sin" is not the same as a sinful body, since the physical body itself is not sinful (cf. Mark 7:21-23). Probably the body in this expression represents the whole person (cf. vv. 12-13). We express our sinfulness through our bodies. "Our body of sin" means our bodies that are characterized by sin. Similarly, "sons of disobedience" (Eph. 2:2; 5:6) means sons who are characterized by disobedience. The result of our crucifixion with Christ was that the body no longer needs to be an instrument that we use to sin, since we are no longer slaves of sin.

6:7 Death ends all claims. Paul illustrated his point in verse 6 by referring to this general truth in verse 7. Once a person has died, he or she has no more earthly obligations. Because of our death with Christ, we have no further obligation to respond to the dictates of our sinful human nature. We may choose to do so, but we do not have to do so, and we should not do so (cf. Eph. 4:22-32).

This verse does not mean that the power of sinful habits or the effects of sinful influences will cease to bother a person when he or she becomes a Christian. It does mean that the Christian is no longer under the slavery to sin that he or she used to live under. Our senses create a problem for us here: The unsaved person may think that he is not a slave to sin when he really is. Conversely the Christian may think that he is a slave to sin though he is not. The fact remains: God has broken the chain that once bound us to sin, and, happily, we are free of its domination. Unfortunately we will not be free of its enticement until our glorification.

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 375.

The translation "freed [or acquitted] from sin" is legitimate but perhaps misleading. It may imply a forensic relationship to sin—that God declares us sinless. But Paul was speaking of our relationship to sin's power and dominion in daily living in this section (practical sanctification, not justification).

- 6:8 "If" could be translated "since" (first class condition in Greek, that in this case represents a condition genuinely true to reality). Believers have indeed died with Christ. Paul now turned from discussing the effect that our union with Christ has on our problem with sin (vv. 6-7) and proceeded to explain the effect that our union with Him has on our problem with death. Death is the result of sin. Here physical resurrection is in view, as is clear from the future tense (cf. 1 Cor. 15:54-57). However, some writers have taken this as referring to our life lived out here and now.<sup>1</sup>

"Life with Christ, upon which the believer enters when he is born of God, never ceases. Its continuance rests, not upon our efforts any more than salvation by grace does."<sup>2</sup>

- 6:9 Death could not hold Jesus Christ, our Representative, in the grave. It cannot hold the believer there either. Furthermore, neither He nor we will die a second time. We will never again come under the enslaving, spiritual death-dealing power of sin.
- 6:10 Jesus Christ will never have to die again, because when He died *for* sin, He died *to* sin. This means that when He died, His relationship to sin changed. It was never the same again. Sin now has no power over Him. How could sin have had a claim on Him who knew no sin? God treated Him as though He were sinful for our sakes. He bore our sins. After He paid for our sins He was free to resume His intimate relationship with God forever.

---

<sup>1</sup>E.g., Mounce, p. 152; and Cranfield, 1:312-13.

<sup>2</sup>Vine, p. 90.

"This stands in opposition to the doctrine and practice of the so-called perpetual sacrifice of Christ in the Roman Catholic Mass."<sup>1</sup>

6:11 Since God has united us with Christ, we should "consider" (count, or reckon) ourselves as those who are not under the dominating influence of sin any longer. The verb is a present imperative in the Greek text indicating that we should definitely and constantly view ourselves this way. We must realize that we are free to enjoy our new relationship with God forever.<sup>2</sup>

Paul previously stressed the importance of knowing certain facts (vv. 3, 6, 9). Now he said that we should count on their being true. We must not only understand them but believe them. He used the same Greek word (*logisthesetai*, translated "consider") here as he did in his explanation of justification (2:26; 4:3, 4, 5, 6, 8, 9, 10, 11, 22, 23, 24). God considers the believer righteous. Similarly, we should consider it true that our relationship to sin and death has changed. Only as we do so will we relate to temptation, sin, and death realistically.

If we fail to believe that sin no longer dominates us we will be much more vulnerable to yield to temptation, to practice sin, and to fear death. However if we count on sin not having that power we will be more apt to resist temptation, to stay clear of sin, and to anticipate death less fearfully. *Logisthesetai* is in the present tense in the Greek text, indicating that we need to maintain a realistic view of our relationship to sin (i.e., to keep on considering).

"The word *reckon* is a word for *faith*—in the face of appearances."<sup>3</sup>

In some parts of the United States, "I reckon" means "I guess." For example, "I reckon it's going to rain this afternoon." That

---

<sup>1</sup>Witmer, p. 463. Cf. Heb. 7:27; 9:12; 10:10. See Ludwig Ott, *Fundamentals of Catholic Dogma*, pp. 402-13, for the Roman Catholic doctrine of the sacrifice of the Mass.

<sup>2</sup>See Don Matzat, *Christ-Esteem*.

<sup>3</sup>Newell, p. 225.

is not its meaning here. It means to count on something being true, to believe it.

"This is no game of 'let's pretend'; believers should consider themselves to be what God in fact has made them."<sup>1</sup>

It is a mistake to conclude, however, that "this makes impossible a life of habitual sin."<sup>2</sup> The Christian may choose to sin, and to sin repeatedly. That is why Paul proceeded to urge believers not to let sin reign in their mortal bodies (v. 12).

6:12 Paul had expounded the reality and implications of the believer's union with Christ in His death, burial, and resurrection (vv. 1-10). He had also urged his readers, therefore, to consider themselves dead to sin and alive to God (v. 11). He now proceeded to call on them to present themselves to God in a decisive act of self-dedication (vv. 12-23).

"Therefore" draws a conclusion on the basis of what has preceded. Since as believers we know that we are no longer subject to sin's domination, and since we count that as true, we should not let sin reign in our bodies any longer. That is, we should not use our bodies, including our minds, to sin. Sin is no longer our master, so we can and should stop carrying out its orders.

"Though we may be sometimes overtaken and overcome by it, yet let us never be obedient to it."<sup>3</sup>

Paul undoubtedly was giving a general prohibition, not implying that the Roman Christians in particular were letting sin reign over them (cf. 15:14-15). When temptation comes, we do not have to yield to it (cf. 1 Cor. 10:13).

---

<sup>1</sup>Bruce, p. 132.

<sup>2</sup>Wuest, 3:1:95.

<sup>3</sup>Henry, p. 1766.

"... 'passions' would include not only the physical lusts and appetites but also those desires that reside in the mind and will: the desire to have our own way, the desire to possess what other people have (cf. 7:7-8), the desire to have dominance over others."<sup>1</sup>

"People sometimes see an individual who is under the power of addiction and say, 'He obviously can't be a Christian if he's in bondage to this.' Where do you find support for that in Scripture? Paul suggests otherwise. A believer can also become enslaved to greed, anger, sloth, envy, or lust, for example. But we are commanded not to, and we are promised that God's power is there to help us find freedom from this slavery."<sup>2</sup>

6:13 In particular, we should not use our natural capacities (all our faculties, not only our limbs) to commit sin. Positively, we should "present" ourselves "to God," and our body parts (eyes [representing what we look at], ears [what we listen to], mouths [what we say], hands [what we do], feet [where we go], hearts [what we love], minds [what we think about], wills [the decisions we make], etc.) as His "instruments" in order to fulfill His will (cf. 12:1). Believers have a choice. We can present ourselves to sin or to God, to do its will or His will (cf. Eph. 4:17-32). The unbeliever only has this choice to a limited extent, since he is the slave of sin. The unbeliever can sometimes choose to do what is right, but he or she can never escape the dominating effect of sin in his or her life.

"Some commentators think that Paul ... pictures this 'presenting' as a 'once-for-all' action, or as ingressive ('start presenting'), or as urgent. But the aorist tense in itself does not indicate such nuances and nothing in the context here clearly suggests any of them. In fact, the aorist imperative often lacks any special force, being

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 383.

<sup>2</sup>Swindoll, *The Swindoll ...*, p. 1386.

used simply to command that an action take place—without regard for the duration, urgency, or frequency of the action. This is probably the case here. However, we may surmise that, as the negative *not* presenting ourselves to sin is constantly necessary, so is the positive giving ourselves in service to God, our rightful ruler."<sup>1</sup>

"God is to have the complete use of all that we are and have."<sup>2</sup>

"He is no fool who gives what he cannot keep to gain what he cannot lose."<sup>3</sup>

I find that it is helpful for me to make this conscious presentation of myself to God daily.

THE CHRISTIAN'S THREE-FOLD ENEMY	
The Problem	The Solution
<p><b>The World</b> (1 John 2:15-17) Lust of the flesh Lust of the eyes Pride of life</p>	<p><b>Flee</b> (1 Tim. 6:11; 2 Tim. 2:22)</p>
<p><b>The flesh</b> (Rom. 7:18-24)</p>	<p><b>Deny</b> (Rom. 6:12-13; 8:13)</p>
<p><b>The devil</b> (1 Peter 5:8)</p>	<p><b>Resist</b> (1 Peter 5:9)</p>

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 385.

<sup>2</sup>Vine, p. 93.

<sup>3</sup>Jim Elliot, quoted in Elisabeth Elliot, *Shadow of the Almighty*, p. 108.

"The moment we come to exhortation, we have to do with the *will*; whereas believing is a matter of the heart: 'With the *heart* man believeth.'"<sup>1</sup>

"Paul's first instruction ('know') centered in the *mind*, and this second instruction ('reckon') focuses on the *heart*. His third instruction touches the *will*."<sup>2</sup>

Some Reformed interpreters believe that progressive sanctification is automatic. They believe that God automatically transforms every true Christian into the image of Christ during his or her present lifetime. If this transformation is not obvious, then the person professing to be a Christian must not be one. I would respond that he or she may not be, but there is another possibility:

"Is the Holy Spirit being allowed to transform your life? There are only two possible answers: yes or no. If your answer is no, there are two possible reasons. Either you do not have the Spirit within you (i.e., you're not a Christian), or He is there but you prefer to live life on your own."<sup>3</sup>

"Why does the Lord want your body? To begin with, the believer's body is God's temple, and He wants to use it for His glory (1 Cor. 6:19-20; Phil. 1:20-21). But Paul wrote that the body is also God's tool and God's weapon (Rom. 6:13). God wants to use the members of the body as tools for building His kingdom and weapons for fighting His enemies."<sup>4</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Newell, p. 229.

<sup>2</sup>Wiersbe, 1:532.

<sup>3</sup>Charles R. Swindoll, "Is the Holy Spirit Transforming You?" *Kindred Spirit* 18:1 (January-April 1994):7. Paragraph division omitted. This article is an excerpt from the same writer's book *Flying Closer to the Flame*, p. 52.

<sup>4</sup>Wiersbe, 1:533.

Whereas presenting our bodies to Christ for His service is not a requirement for salvation, the person who makes this presentation furnishes proof that he or she is a child of God by doing so.

"The surest evidence of our spiritual life is the dedication of ourselves to God."<sup>1</sup>

6:14

"In verses 1-11 the Apostle has shown what it means to be united to Christ; in verses 12 and 13 he has shown the consequences and made his appeal to the believer; and now in verse 14 he assures us of the Divine provision for the complete fulfillment of these exhortations."<sup>2</sup>

The apostle concluded this section of his argument with a word of encouragement: "sin shall not be master over you." The basic reason for this is that the believer is not under the Mosaic Law—as the authority under which he or she lives—but under grace. Satan can no longer use the Law to hinder the believer's progress (cf. 3:23). God has redeemed us, not by the Law but by grace. We now live under that authority and in that sphere. Paul dealt with the tension that this situation creates for the believer in chapter 7.

Usually the word "grace" refers to the principle by which God operates. But it also describes the sphere in which the believer lives, as here (cf. 5:2)—as the Law describes the old realm. Being under grace is not, however, a condition in which we are free from any responsibility (cf. Matt. 11:28-30; Titus 2:11-12), as Paul proceeded to clarify in verses 15 through 23. Neither was there an absence of grace under the Mosaic Law.

"It is not restraint, but inspiration, which liberates from sin: not Mount Sinai but Mount Calvary which makes saints."<sup>3</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Henry, p. 1766.

<sup>2</sup>Griffith Thomas, *St. Paul's Epistle ...*, p. 171.

<sup>3</sup>Denney, 2:635.



"Romans 6 is the classic biblical text on the importance of relating the 'indicative' of what God has done for us with the 'imperative' of what we are to do. Paul stresses that we must actualize in daily experience the freedom from sin's lordship (cf. v. 14a) that is ours 'in Christ Jesus.'"<sup>1</sup>

## 2. Slavery to righteousness 6:15-23

"The next two sections (vi. 15-23; vii. 1-6) might be described summarily as a description of the Christian's release, what it is and what it is not."<sup>2</sup>

In the first part of this chapter Paul explained that Christ has broken the bonds of sin that enslave the Christian (vv. 1-14). In the second part he warned that, even though Christians are free, they can become enslaved to sin by yielding to temptation (vv. 15-23; cf. John 8:34). Rather than being enslaved to sin, as believers, we should voluntarily yield ourselves as slaves to righteousness.

"Emancipation from Sin is but the prelude to a new service of Righteousness."<sup>3</sup>

"Three words summarize the reasons for our yielding: *favor* (Rom. 6:14-15), *freedom* (Rom. 6:16-20), and *fruit* (Rom. 6:21-23)."<sup>4</sup>

6:15 Paul's question here is not a repetition of verse 1. There he asked if believers could continue in sin. Here he said, "Are we to sin?" In verse 1 he was looking at continual sinning. Here he dealt with specific acts of sin. A sinful lifestyle and acts of sin are both inappropriate for a believer who is living under God's gracious authority.

"There is a strong inclination to think that law stops sinning, that, unless we have at least some law, we shall not be kept from sinning even when

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, pp. 390-91.

<sup>2</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 167.

<sup>3</sup>Ibid.

<sup>4</sup>Wiersbe, 1:533.

we are under the fulness of grace; that grace alone is insufficient for this purpose. For this reason so many Christians are legalists. On the other hand, some are inclined to think that, since grace pardons sins so freely, one need not be so careful about not sinning, a few sins more or less make no difference to grace which will take care of the additional sins."<sup>1</sup>

"Surely, the objector says, we may take a night off now and then and sin a little bit 'since we are under grace.'"<sup>2</sup>

6:16 Having presented himself to God in dedication (v. 13), the believer needs to "obey" Him. Obligation always follows dedication, whether the dedication is to sin or to obedience (cf. Matt. 6:24). The outcome of dedication to "sin" is "death" (5:12; 8:13), but the outcome of dedication to "obedience" is "righteousness." Imparted, moral righteousness (progressive sanctification) is in view here, not imputed righteousness (justification, cf. 5:19).

"Many people who have been convicted of the guilt of sin and have relied on the shed blood of Christ as putting away that guilt, have not yet, however, seen a state of sin as abject *slavery*."<sup>3</sup>

"Sin has a power of development; it goes beyond the primary intentions of those who give themselves to it."<sup>4</sup>

"Sin will take you farther than you want to go, ... sin will leave you longer than you want to stay, sin will cost you far more than you want to pay."<sup>5</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Lenski, p. 420.

<sup>2</sup>Robertson, 4:364.

<sup>3</sup>Newell, p. 238.

<sup>4</sup>Vine, p. 95.

<sup>5</sup>From the song "Sin Will Take You Farther" by The Cathedrals..

- 6:17 The "form of teaching" that Paul had in mind here was the teaching that the Lord Jesus Himself gave during His earthly ministry and then through His apostles (cf. Gal. 6:2). It is in contrast to the teaching of the Mosaic Law. God had not forced Paul's readers to yield to Jesus' teachings as to the Law. They had willingly embraced it as law for themselves. They had committed themselves to it "from the heart." Paul was not stressing the fact that the Lord had committed His teachings to his readers, as the AV translation "which was committed to you" implies, but that they had been "entrusted" to them.<sup>1</sup>
- 6:18 The slavery of the readers "to righteousness" was therefore voluntary. It seems that because of our very nature, human beings must be the slave of something. "Righteousness" here is the result of following Christian teaching, and it is the equivalent of godly living. It is righteous character and conduct.
- Paul did not say that every believer takes advantage of his or her freedom from sin's tyranny to become a slave of God ("slaves to righteousness"). He said the Roman Christians had done so, and in this he rejoiced. Dedication to God is voluntary, not automatic for the Christian (cf. v. 13; 12:1). If a believer does not truly dedicate himself or herself to God, he or she will continue to practice sin to a greater extent than he would if he did present himself to God (v. 16).
- 6:19 Paul had put his teaching "in human terms." He had compared the believer's situation to that of a free person, on the one hand, and to a slave on the other. He did this in order to help his readers grasp his point but also in order to make a strong impact on them. Paul felt constrained to be very graphic and direct in view of their past. They had formerly deliberately yielded to sin ("as slaves to impurity"). Now they needed to deliberately present themselves as slaves to righteousness (cf. vv. 13, 16). This would result in their progressive

---

<sup>1</sup>AV refers to *The Holy Bible: Authorized King James Version*.

sanctification.<sup>1</sup> Paul personified "impurity," "lawlessness," and "righteousness." Note again that progressive sanctification is not totally passive or automatic. It requires some human action.

"... what we most earnestly assert is that not only Paul here, but our Lord Himself, and Scripture generally, sets forth that *only those that know the truth and walk therein, are free.*"<sup>2</sup>

- 6:20 As an added incentive, Paul reminded his readers that, when they had chosen the slavery to sin option in the past, they did not gain any moral righteousness. Again, he used personification: "sin" and "righteousness." What Paul said applied equally to their pre-conversion and post-conversion experience.
- 6:21 His readers reaped no benefits from their slavery to sin. Shame was its immediate result, and "death" was its final outcome.
- 6:22 Now, in contrast, they were free from sin's tyranny because of their union with Christ. If they presented themselves as slaves to God voluntarily they could anticipate the benefit of progressive sanctification (holiness) and the outcome of eternal life (cf. John 10:10; 17:3). Scripture speaks of eternal life as both the immediate and the ultimate product of progressive sanctification. Quality of life is involved as well as quantity.
- 6:23 Paul brought his thoughts on this subject to a summary conclusion in this verse. The principle stated here is applicable to all people, believers and unbelievers. It contrasts the masters, "sin" and "God," with the outcomes, "death" and "eternal life." Paul also distinguished the means whereby death and life come to people: Death is the "wages" that a person earns by his or her working, but eternal life is a "gracious gift" that is free to those who rely on the work of Another.

---

<sup>1</sup>See Larry J. Waters, "Paradoxes in the Pauline Epistles," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 167:668 (October-December 2010):435-41.

<sup>2</sup>Newell, p. 242. Cf. John 8:31-32, 34, 36.

Wages normally maintain life, but the wages of sin result in death. Employers usually pay wages out regularly and periodically rather than in a lump sum. Death also comes to the sinner regularly and periodically during the sinner's lifetime, not only when he or she dies. Furthermore wages are a right, but life is a gift.

"Man has rights only in relation to sin, and these rights become his judgment. When he throws himself on God without claim, salvation comes to him."<sup>1</sup>

Verses 15 through 23 teach truth by way of contrasts. Obedience to sin yields unfruitfulness, shame, and death. Obedience to righteousness results in progressive sanctification and the fullness (or abundance) of eternal life.

"The obedience of first commitment must be repeated in every decision of any moral consequence so that it may increasingly be an obedience which results in righteousness, a righteousness which results in sanctification, a sanctification which results in eternal life."<sup>2</sup>

In chapter 6 Paul prescribed four steps designed to promote practical sanctification: First, we must *know* certain facts about our union with Christ, specifically that sin no longer possesses the dominating power over the believer that it has over the unbeliever (vv. 3-10). Second, we must *consider* these facts to be true of us personally (v. 11). Third, we must *present* ourselves to God in dedication as His slaves to perform righteousness (vv. 12-14). Fourth, we must *obey* God (vv. 15-23). If we do not, we will find ourselves falling back under the domination of sin in our lives and becoming (hopefully only temporarily) its slaves once again. Each of these verbs has the force of an active command. Each represents something every believer should do. These are our basic responsibilities in our progressive sanctification regarding our relationship to sin.<sup>3</sup>

Christians over the years have understood the role of dedication in practical sanctification in several different ways: First, some believe that when a

---

<sup>1</sup> *Theological Dictionary of the New Testament*, s.v. "opsonion," by H. W. Heiland, 5(1967):592.

<sup>2</sup> Dunn, p. 357.

<sup>3</sup> See Chafer, *Systematic Theology*, 2:351-54.

Christian experiences a second work of grace in his or her life (a "second blessing" or a spiritual crisis), he or she rises to new heights of holiness from which he or she never falls. This is the sinless perfection view.

Second, some believe that when a Christian truly dedicates himself or herself to God, he or she rises to a level of holiness from which he or she never falls. This is not sinless perfection, but a higher level of holiness than those who do not dedicate themselves to God experience. This teaching has been popularized by the Keswick movement.<sup>1</sup>

Third, some believe that dedication to God is a good idea but not very important, because Christians struggle with sin all their lives. This is a rather fatalistic view that does not give enough credit to the transforming power of the Holy Spirit.

Fourth, some believe that unless a person dedicates himself or herself to God, or at least is willing to do so, he or she cannot be saved. This view confuses the requirement for justification (faith) with the requirement for discipleship (obedience) by mixing them together. Ideally, dedication should accompany saving faith, but it does not need to do so for a person to be saved.

Fifth, some believe that dedicating oneself to God once is all that is necessary in order to live a consistently upright life. This view often interprets the aorist tense of the Greek verb, translated "present" in 6:13 and 12:1, as meaning "present once and for all."

Sixth, some believe that, in view of repeated lapses in the Christian's dedication, repeated dedications are helpful to make progress in Christian growth. The aorist tense also means to present in an act of decisive dedication, and it allows for rededications.

I favor the last view. Of course, there are other views, and various combinations of these six, but I believe these are some of the most common views within evangelicalism.

---

<sup>1</sup>See Evan H. Hopkins, *The Law of Liberty in the Spiritual Life*.

## B. THE BELIEVER'S RELATIONSHIP TO THE LAW CH. 7

Having explained that we are now under grace (ch. 6), Paul explained that we are not under the Mosaic Law (ch. 7; cf. 6:15). He followed a similar pattern as he unpacked his revelation in this chapter like he did in the former one. He began chapter 6 by explaining that we are no longer the slaves of sin because of our union with Christ (6:1-14). He then warned us Christians that we can, nevertheless, become slaves of sin if we yield to it (6:15-23). In chapter 7 he explained that we are no longer under obligation to keep the Mosaic Law because of our union with Christ (7:1-6). He then warned us that we can become slaves to our flesh, nonetheless, if we put ourselves under the Law (7:7-25).

Paul needed to explain the believer's relationship to the Law because of people's natural tendency to view keeping laws as a means of making progress, even progress in sanctification. The apostle had already shown that the Law has no value in justification (3:20). Now he spoke of it in relation to progressive sanctification. If believers are not under the Mosaic Law (6:14), what is our relationship to it?

"Something in human nature makes us want to go to extremes, a weakness from which Christians are not wholly free. 'Since we are saved by grace,' some argue, 'we are free to live as we please,' which is the extreme of *license*. 'But we cannot ignore God's Law,' others argue. 'We are saved by grace, to be sure; but we must live under Law if we are to please God.' This is the extreme expression of *legalism*. Paul answered the first group in Romans 6; the second group he answered in Romans 7. The word *law* is used twenty-three times in this chapter. In Romans 6, Paul told us how to stop doing bad things; in Romans 7 he told how *not* to do good things."<sup>1</sup>

McGee titled verses 1 through 14 "the shackles of a saved soul," and verses 15 through 25 "the struggle of a saved soul."<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Wiersbe, 1:534. Paragraph divisions omitted.

<sup>2</sup>McGee, 4:688.

## 1. The Law's authority 7:1-6

7:1 For the first time since 1:13 Paul addressed his readers as "brothers and sisters."

"Comparing the other seven instances in which this address is used, it is easily seen that it always marks some special concern on Paul's part, sometimes in connection with a fervent admonition, sometimes in connection with a subject that is close to Paul's heart, which he feels it necessary to impress upon his hearers beyond other subjects. The latter is the case here where he comes to speak with regard to our deliverance from law."<sup>1</sup>

"Those who know the Law"—the definite article "the" before "Law" is absent in the Greek text—were Paul's Roman readers. They lived in the capital of the empire where officials debated, enacted, and enforced laws. They of all people were very familiar with law and legal matters. But it is the acquaintance of these Roman believers with Old Testament law that was probably in Paul's mind.<sup>2</sup>

The Romans would not have argued with Paul that law has authority only over living people. We can anticipate where Paul would go with his argument, since he earlier explained the believer's death with Christ. Since we have died with Christ, law has no authority over us (cf. 6:14).

"It is a general principle of the law that death cancels engagements."<sup>3</sup>

7:2-3 These verses illustrate the truth of the principle just stated in verse 1. The law binds a "married woman" to her "husband." Paul's example was especially true in Jewish life, where the Mosaic Law did not permit a married woman to divorce her husband. In the illustration, the married woman represents the

---

<sup>1</sup>Lenski, pp. 442-43.

<sup>2</sup>Cranfield, 1:333; Barrett, p. 135.

<sup>3</sup>Lightfoot, p. 300.



believer, and the husband represents the Law. A woman is no longer a married woman if her husband dies, so she is free as a woman to marry again.

"As a woman whose husband has died is free to marry another, so also are believers, since they have died to the law, free to belong to Christ."<sup>1</sup>

7:4 "Therefore" introduces an application of the illustration to the readers. The believer was not "put to death in regard to the Law" (i.e., freed from its binding authority) because the Law died, but because he or she died with Christ. Believers have died to the Mosaic Law (Torah, lit. instruction), not to the Old Testament. The Old Testament is still authoritative revelation for the Christian. But the relationship that once existed between the Old Testament believer and the Mosaic Law no longer exists for the Christian. The "body of Christ" is the literal body that died on the cross. Paul viewed Jesus again as our representative, as he did in 5:12 through 21 and chapter 6, rather than as our substitute, as he did in 3:25. Since we died with Christ, we no longer have to live according to the commands of the Mosaic Law.

Every believer not only died with Christ but also arose with Him (6:14). Thus God has joined us to Christ in both His death and resurrection. The phrase "might belong to another" does not imply that our union is only a possibility. God did unite us with Christ (6:5). The result of our union should be "fruit" for God (cf. John 15:1-6; Gal. 5:22-23).

7:5 This is the first use of the term "the flesh" in the ethical sense in Romans. As mentioned previously, the flesh, used metaphorically, often refers to our human nature, which is sinful. The NIV translators interpreted it properly as "sinful nature." The description itself does not indicate whether the people in view are saved or unsaved, since both groups have "the flesh" and live by employing it. Here the context suggests that Paul had pre-conversion days in mind in this verse. Just as union with Christ can bear fruit for God (v. 4), so can life in the

---

<sup>1</sup>Mounce, p. 160.

flesh can bear "fruit for death." The Law aroused "sinful passions" by prohibiting them. Forbidden fruit is the sweetest kind in the mouth, but it often produces a stomachache (cf. Gen. 3).

7:6 Paul summarized verses 1 through 5 here. Believers "died" to "the Law" just as we died to sin (6:6). The same Greek word translated "died" (*katargeo*) occurs in both verses. Christ's death as our representative changed (lit. rendered idle) our relationship to both entities. It is as though God shifted the transmissions of our lives into neutral gear. Now something else drives our lives, namely, the Holy Spirit. Sin and the Law no longer drive us forward, though we can engage those powers (gears) if we choose to do so and take back control of our lives from God.

"The Christian life turns [operates] on an inspiration from above, not on an elaborate code of commands and prohibitions."<sup>1</sup>

The contrast between "the Spirit" and "the letter" raises a question about whether Paul meant the Holy Spirit or the spirit of the Law (cf. 2:27-29). Both meanings fit his argument, so he could have intended either one or both. The definite article "the" is not in the Greek text. On the one hand, "the spirit" of the Mosaic Law, restated by Christ and the apostles, is what we are responsible to obey (6:13-19), rather than "the letter" of the Mosaic Law.

On the other hand, we serve with the enablement of the indwelling Holy Spirit, which most Old Testament believers did not possess.<sup>2</sup> The Greek word translated "newness" (*kainoteti*) suggests something fresh rather than something recent. Our service is more recent, but Paul stressed the superiority, freshness, and vitality of the believer's relationship to God, having experienced union with Christ.

---

<sup>1</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 176.

<sup>2</sup>See Leon Wood, *The Holy Spirit in the Old Testament*.

Perhaps the Holy Spirit was Paul's primary referent, since he developed the ministry of the Holy Spirit in the believer's life in chapter 8. But "spirit" and "flesh" probably refer to the new and old covenants respectively.<sup>1</sup> The verse, of course, is saying nothing about the non-literal, as contrasted with the literal, interpretation of Scripture.

Paul did not say: We have been released from the ceremonial part of the Law—as opposed to the whole Law. The Mosaic Law was a unified code that contained moral, religious, and civil regulations that governed the entire life of the Israelites (Exod. 20—Num. 10). God has terminated the whole code as a regulator of Christians' lives (cf. 10:4).

Christians have received a new code that Paul called "the Law of Christ" (1 Cor. 9:21; Gal. 6:2). It contains some of the same commandments as the old Mosaic Code, including nine of the Ten Commandments. The only one that Jesus did not carry over was the fourth commandment about Sabbath observance. Even though it repeats nine of the Ten Commandments, the Law of Christ is nevertheless a new code. Thus Paul could say that God has released us from the Law of Moses. The Law of Christ consists of the teachings of Jesus Christ that He communicated during His earthly ministry that are in the New Testament. It also consists of teachings that He gave through His apostles and prophets following His ascension to heaven.<sup>2</sup> This is one of several passages that reveal that Christians have no obligation to keep the Law of Moses (cf. 10:4; 14:17; Mark 7:18-19; John 1:17; Acts 10:10-15; 1 Cor. 8:8; 2 Cor. 3:7-11; Heb. 7:12; 9:10; Gal. 3:24; 4:9-11; 5:1).<sup>3</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 421.

<sup>2</sup>See Charles C. Ryrie, "The End of the Law," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 124:495 (July-September 1967):239-47.

<sup>3</sup>See John F. Hart, "Released From the Law for Sanctification: A Dispensational Perspective on Romans 7:6," in *Dispensationalism Tomorrow & Beyond*, pp. 397-417.

## 2. The Law's activity 7:7-12

Paul wrote that the believer is dead to both sin (6:2) and the Law (7:4). Are they in some sense the same? The answer is no (v. 7). The apostle referred to the relationship between sin and the Law in verse 5, but now he developed it more fully. Essentially his argument was that the Law is not sinful, though it makes us aware of what is sinful (cf. 3:20). The Law is similar to an X-ray machine that reveals a tumor. The machine itself is not bad because it reveals something bad.

The apostle probably appealed to his own personal experience in what follows. The main alternative views are that he was speaking of Adam's experience, Israel's experience, or the experience of every man.<sup>1</sup> Paul used his own experience to illustrate what every person faces (vv. 7-13) and the struggle that every believer encounters when he or she tries to serve God by obeying the Law (vv. 14-25).

"It is the Apostle's spiritual history, but universalized ..."<sup>2</sup>

Others hold that Paul was describing only the experience of an unbeliever. Discussion of these views will follow. Every believer, particularly, feels frustrated by the operation of his or her sinful human nature.

"Before beginning the study of this great struggle of Paul's, let us get it settled firmly in our minds that Paul is here exercised not at all about pardon, but about deliverance: 'Who shall deliver me from this body of death?' The whole question is concerning indwelling sin, as a power; and not committed sins, as a danger."<sup>3</sup>

"He gives a picture of all men under law in order to show why death to law is a part of the Gospel."<sup>4</sup>

7:7 Paul's example of the Law, namely the tenth commandment, clarifies that by "the Law" he was not referring to the whole Old Testament. He meant the Mosaic Law and particularly the moral part of it: the Ten Commandments. Reformed

---

<sup>1</sup>See Moo, pp. 425-31, and Cranfield, 1:342-47, for explanations of these other views.

<sup>2</sup>Denney, 2:639.

<sup>3</sup>Newell, p. 261.

<sup>4</sup>Griffith Thomas, *St. Paul's Epistle ...*, p. 186.

theologians like to distinguish the moral from the ceremonial parts of the Mosaic Law at this point. Many of them contend that God has only terminated the ceremonial part of the Law.<sup>1</sup> Here, however, Paul, arguing that the Christian is dead to the Law, used one of the Ten Commandments as an example of the Law. He was not saying, of course, that immoral behavior is all right for the Christian (cf. 8:4).

Paul's use of "sin" in this paragraph shows that he was thinking of sin as a force within everyone: our sinful human nature. He was not thinking of an act of sin. It is that force, or sin principle, that the Law's prohibitions and requirements arouse. The basic meaning of the Greek word translated "sin" (*hamartia*) is "falling short." We see that we fall short of what God requires when we become aware of His laws.

"The Law is a mirror that reveals the inner man and shows us how dirty we are (James 1:22-25)."<sup>2</sup>

The demands of the Law—in this case, "You shall not covet"—make us consciously aware of ("come to know") our sin. Probably Paul selected the tenth commandment for his illustration because it deals with desires (i.e., illicit desires of every kind). Our desires are the roots of our actions. The tenth commandment is also the most convicting commandment. Everyone who is honest would have to admit that he or she has broken it.

7:8 One illustration of what Paul had in mind here is the story of the temptation and Fall in Genesis 3. Whenever someone establishes a law prohibiting something, the natural tendency of people is to resist it. If you tell a small child: Don't do such-and-such, you may create a desire within him or her to do it, a desire that was not there before. The Law is a catalyst that aids and even initiates the action of sin in us.<sup>3</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>E.g., Calvin, 2:458-60.

<sup>2</sup>Wiersbe, 1:535.

<sup>3</sup>Barrett, p. 141.

"Suppose a man determined to drive his automobile to the very limit of its speed. If ... signs along the road would say, No Speed Limit, the man's only thought would be to press his machine forward. But now suddenly he encounters a road with frequent signs limiting speed to thirty miles an hour. The man's will rebels, and his rebellion is aroused still further by threats: Speed Limit Strictly Enforced. Now the man drives on fiercely, conscious both of his desire to 'speed,' and his rebellion against restraint. The speed limit signs did not create the wild desire to rush forward: that was there before. But the notices brought the man into conscious conflict with authority."<sup>1</sup>

The word "coveting" covers a wide range of appetites, not just sexual desires, which the AV translation "lust" (and "concupiscence," v. 8) implies. "Dead" in this verse means dormant or inactive, but not completely impotent, as is clear from verse 9, where this "dead" sin springs to life. The absence of the verb before "dead" in the Greek text indicates that what Paul was saying was a generalization rather than a specific historical allusion.

7:9 Paul was relatively "alive apart from the Law." No one is ever completely unrelated to or unaffected by it. However, in his past, Paul had lived unaware of the Law's true demands and was therefore self-righteous (cf. Phil. 3:6). His pre-conversion struggles were mainly intellectual (e.g., Was Jesus the Messiah?) rather than moral.

"Saul of Tarsus could have headed the Spanish Inquisition, and have had no qualms of conscience!"<sup>2</sup>

When the commandment entered Paul's consciousness, it aroused sin, and he died—in the sense that he became aware

---

<sup>1</sup>Newell, pp. 265-66. Cf. Barclay, p. 99.

<sup>2</sup>Newell, p. 268.

of his spiritual deadness. This is true of everyone. Paul was not speaking of His union with Christ in death here but of the moment that he recognized his unsaved condition.

"Sin at first is there, but dormant; not until it has the help of the Law does it become an active power of mischief."<sup>1</sup>

7:10 The original intent of the Law (for Old Testament believers to whom it was given) was to bring people blessing ("life") as they obeyed it (Lev. 18:5). Nevertheless because Paul did not obey it, he found that it condemned him.

"... it seems fair to conclude that the law would have given life *had it been perfectly obeyed.*"<sup>2</sup>

7:11 Paul personified "sin" as an actor here. Sin plays the part of a tempter. It "deceived" Paul and "killed" (destroyed) him (cf. Gen. 3:13). Paul's sinful nature urged him to do the very thing "the commandment" forbade. This is what sin does to all people.

"So throughout the ages sin makes a double promise to her victims; first, that no evil consequences will ensue; secondly, that their view of life will be enlarged and that on this increased knowledge will follow increased happiness."<sup>3</sup>

"Ever since Adam ate forbidden fruit, we have all been fond of forbidden paths."<sup>4</sup>

"As the new Christian grows, he comes into contact with various philosophies of the Christian life. He can read books, attend seminars, listen to tapes, and get a great deal of information. If he is not careful, he will start following a human leader and accept his teachings as Law. This practice is

---

<sup>1</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 180.

<sup>2</sup>Moo, p. 439.

<sup>3</sup>Lightfoot, p. 303.

<sup>4</sup>Henry, p. 1769.

a very subtle form of legalism, and it kills spiritual growth. No human teacher can take the place of Christ; no book can take the place of the Bible. Men can give us information, but only the Spirit can give us illumination and help us understand spiritual truths. The Spirit enlightens us and enables us; no human leader can do that."<sup>1</sup>

7:12 Here is a concluding reaffirmation of the answer to Paul's question in verse 7. Far from being sinful, the Law is "holy." It comes from a holy God and searches out sin. It is "righteous" because it lays just requirements on people and because it forbids and condemns sin. It is "good" because its purpose is to produce blessing and life (v. 10).<sup>2</sup>

### **3. The Law's inability 7:13-25**

In verses 13 through 25 Paul continued to describe his personal struggle with sin but with mounting intensity. The forces of external Law and internal sin (i.e., his sinful nature) conflicted. He found no deliverance from this conflict except through the Lord Jesus Christ (v. 25). Many students of this passage, including myself, believe that what Paul was describing here was his own personal struggle as a Christian to obey the Law and so overcome the promptings of his sinful nature (his flesh) to disobey it.<sup>3</sup> The present tenses in his testimony support this view. Without God's help he could not succeed. I will say more in defense of this view later. However, what he wrote here is not the normal or necessary Christian experience. What is normal and necessary for a Christian is to obey God, since the Holy Spirit leads, motivates, and enables us. Disobedience is, in this sense, abnormal Christian conduct.

7:13 Paul next explained the Law's relationship to "death." The responsibility for death belongs to "sin," not the Law (cf. 6:23). Sin's use of something good, the Law, to bring about

---

<sup>1</sup>Wiersbe, 1:536.

<sup>2</sup>See Adeyemi, pp. 55-57.

<sup>3</sup>Cf. John F. Hart, "Paul as Weak in Faith in Romans 7:7-25," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 170:679 (July-September 2013):317-43.



something bad, death, shows the utter sinfulness of sin (cf. Gen. 3:1).

7:14 As a foundation for what follows the apostle reminded his readers that all the godly ("we") know that "the Law is spiritual" (Gr. *pneumatikos*; cf. 1 Cor. 3:1). It came from God (cf. vv. 22, 25); it was Holy Spirit-given.<sup>1</sup> Paul did not want his readers to understand what he was going to say about the Law as a criticism of the God who gave it.

In contrast to the "good" Law Paul was "fleshly" (Gr. *sarkinos*, made of flesh; cf. 1 Cor. 3:1). People are essentially different from the Law because we have a sinful nature, whereas the Law itself is sinless. Therefore there is a basic antagonism between people and the Law.

"'Sold under sin' is exactly what the new convert does not know! Forgiven, justified, he knows himself to be: and he has the joy of it! But now to find an evil nature, of which he had never become really conscious, and of which he thought himself fully rid, when he first believed, is a 'second lesson' which is often more bitter than the first—of guilt!"<sup>2</sup>

Paul's statement that he was even now as a Christian the slave of sin may seem to contradict what he wrote earlier in chapter 6 about no longer being the slave of sin. The phrase "sold into bondage to sin" is proof to many interpreters that Paul was describing a non-Christian here. However in chapter 6 Paul did not say that considering oneself dead to sin means that sin has lost its appeal for the Christian. It still has a strong appeal to every Christian because our human nature is still sinful (6:15-23). He said that considering oneself dead to sin means that we no longer must follow sin's dictates.

In one sense the Christian is not a slave of sin (6:1-14). We have died to it through Christ, and it no longer dominates us.

---

<sup>1</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 181.

<sup>2</sup>Newell, p 272.

Nevertheless in another sense sin still has a strong attraction for us, since our basic human nature is still sinful, and we retain that nature throughout our lifetime. For example, a criminal released from prison no longer has to live within the sphere of existence prescribed by prison walls. However, he still has to live within the confines of his human limitations. God has liberated Christians from the prison-house of sin (6:1-14). Even so, we still carry with us a sinful nature that will be a source of temptation for us as long as we live (7:14-25).

In order to minimize the difficulty of grasping this distinction Paul used different expressions to describe the two relationships. In chapter 6 he used "slaves," but in chapter 7 he wrote "sold" (v. 14). In chapter 6 he spoke of the relationship of the new man in Christ (the whole person, the Christian) to sin. In chapter 7 he spoke of the relationship of the old nature (a part of every person, including the new man in Christ) to sin. Adam sold all human beings into bondage to sin when he sinned (5:12, 14).

"We take it then that Paul is here describing the Christian as carnal and implying that even in him there remains, so long as he continues to live this mortal life, that which is radically opposed to God (cf. 8.7), though chapter 8 will make it abundantly clear that he does not regard the Christian as being carnal in the same unqualified way that the natural man is carnal."<sup>1</sup>

- 7:15 Paul's sinful human nature influenced him to such an extent that he found himself willingly doing (with approval) the very things that he despised intellectually. This caused him to marvel. All Christians can identify with him in this irony.
- 7:16 The apostle's attitude toward the Law was not the reason for his dilemma, since he admitted that the Law is good.
- 7:17 Rather, his problem was traceable to the "sin" that dwelled within him, namely, his sinful human nature. Paul was not trying

---

<sup>1</sup>Cranfield, 1:357. Cf. 1 Cor. 2:14—3:3.

to escape responsibility, but he was identifying the source of his sin: his sinful nature. "I" describes the new man that Paul had become at his conversion (Gal. 2:20): his true self.<sup>1</sup> Viewed as a whole person, he was dead to sin. Nevertheless, the source of sin within him was specifically his sinful human nature, which was still very much alive.

It comes as a terrible discovery for a new believer, or an untaught believer, to realize that their problem with sin is complex. We are sinners, not only because we commit acts of sin (ch. 3), but because, as descendants of Adam, we are born in sin (ch. 5). We are also sinners because we possess a nature that is thoroughly sinful (ch. 7). Jesus Christ paid the penalty for acts of sin, He removed the punishment of original sin, and He enables us to overcome the power of innate sin.

7:18 "In general, we may say that in verses 14-17, the emphasis is upon the practicing what is hated,—that is, the inability to overcome evil in the flesh; while in verses 18-21, the emphasis is upon the failure to do the desired good,—the inability, on account of the flesh, to do right. Thus the double failure of a quickened man either to overcome evil or to accomplish good—is set forth. There must come in help from *outside, beyond himself!*"<sup>2</sup>

By "good does not dwell in me" Paul meant that sin had thoroughly corrupted his nature ("my flesh"). Even though he was a Christian he was still a totally depraved sinner (3:10-18, 23).<sup>3</sup> He knew what he should do, but he did not always do it. "Total depravity" refers to the fact that sin has affected every aspect of a person. It does not mean that people are necessarily as bad as they could be.

7:19-20 These verses restate the idea of verses 15 and 17 respectively. Paul evidently repeated these ideas in order to heighten our appreciation for the frustration that he felt. He

---

<sup>1</sup>Vine, p. 106.

<sup>2</sup>Newell, p. 270. Paragraph division omitted.

<sup>3</sup>See Saucy, "'Sinners' Who ...," pp. 405-11.

also wanted to emphasize the importance of this principle and to help believers identify personally with his experience.

7:21 The statement of this "principle" or law summarizes Paul's thought. Here, when Paul wrote "me," he meant his better self, his true personality, the one who wants to do good.<sup>1</sup>

Six 'laws' are to be differentiated in Romans: (1) the law of Moses, which condemns (3:19); (2) law as a principle (3:21); (3) the law of faith, which excludes self-righteousness (3:27); (4) the law of sin in the members, which is victorious over the law of the mind (7:21, 23, 25); (5) the law of the mind, which consents to the law of Moses but cannot do it because of the law of sin in the members (7:16, 23); and (6) the law of the Spirit, having power to deliver the believer from the law of sin which is in his members, and his conscience from condemnation by the Mosaic law. Moreover the Spirit works in the yielded Christian the very righteousness which Moses' law requires (8:2, 4)."<sup>2</sup>

7:22-23 Intellectually Paul knew that he should obey the Mosaic Law (v. 22), but morally he found himself in rebellion against what he knew was right (v. 23).

"In the light of 8:7-8 it is difficult to view the speaker here [in v. 22] as other than a believer."<sup>3</sup>

This natural rebelliousness was something he could not rid himself of. Perhaps Paul used the term "law of the mind" (v. 23) because the mind has the capacity to perceive and make moral judgments.<sup>4</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Lightfoot, p. 304.

<sup>2</sup>*The New Scofield ...*, p. 1220.

<sup>3</sup>Bruce, p. 146.

<sup>4</sup>Witmer, p. 468.

"It is because people do not recognize their all-badness that they do not find Christ all in all to them."<sup>1</sup>

Happily, Paul explained in chapter 8 that someone with infinite power can enable us to control and overcome our rebelliousness.

7:24 The agony of this tension, and our inability to rid ourselves of our sinful nature that urges us to do things that lead to death, come out even more strongly here ("Wretched man that I am!"). What Christian has not felt the guilt and pain of doing things that he or she knows are wrong?<sup>2</sup> We will never escape this battle with temptation in this life. Eugene Peterson recast Paul's thought in this verse as follows:

"I've tried everything and nothing helps. I'm at the end of my rope. Is there no one who can do anything for me?"<sup>3</sup>

"Here certainly Paul speaks for himself, and not merely as a spokesperson for humanity at large; this is not the stylized formulation of one who is long since removed from the situation in question. The one who cries for help so piteously cries from within the contradiction; he longs for deliverance from the endless war and frequent defeat."<sup>4</sup>

"It was Alfred Lord Tennyson who wrote, 'Oh! that a man would arise in me / that the man I am may cease to be.'"<sup>5</sup>

John Wesley taught that it is possible and important for a Christian to attain freedom from rebellion against God through

---

<sup>1</sup>Newell, p. 278.

<sup>2</sup>See Toussaint, "Suffering in ...," p. 193.

<sup>3</sup>Eugene H. Peterson, *The Message*, p. 317.

<sup>4</sup>Dunn, p. 410.

<sup>5</sup>Johnson, *Discovering Romans*, p. 121. The quotation is from Alfred Lord Tennyson, "Maud: a Monodrama," pt. 1, sec. 10, stanza 5 (1855).

a crisis second work of grace by faith.<sup>1</sup> Wesleyan scholar Melvin Dieter described Wesley's position as follows:

"There was a remedy for the sickness of systemic sinfulness, namely, *entire sanctification*—a personal, definitive work of God's sanctifying grace by which the war within oneself might cease and the heart be fully released from rebellion into wholehearted love for God and others."<sup>2</sup>

"In the Church of the Nazarene, the Salvation Army, the Pilgrim Holiness Church, the Wesleyan Methodist Church (the latter two now merged into the Wesleyan Church), the Free Methodist church, the Church of God (Anderson, Indiana), and many related smaller religious bodies, the Wesleyan doctrine of sanctification found its major expression within the Methodist tradition after the turn of the nineteenth century."<sup>3</sup>

The Wesleyan doctrine of entire sanctification should not be understood as synonymous with sinless perfection. Wesleyans believe that Christians can and do sin. "Entire sanctification," for Wesleyans includes freedom from original sin and willful rebellion, but not freedom from all sin.<sup>4</sup>

Holiness Pentecostals also hold to a second blessing that supposedly elevates the Christian to a higher level of spirituality. Non-holiness Pentecostals, including the Assemblies of God, reject a second work of grace and hold to progressive sanctification.<sup>5</sup> The Keswick movement has advocated a similar higher level of spirituality from which one

---

<sup>1</sup>Melvin E. Dieter, "The Wesleyan Perspective," in *Five Views on Sanctification*, p. 19.

<sup>2</sup>Ibid., p. 17.

<sup>3</sup>Ibid., p. 39.

<sup>4</sup>Ibid., pp. 13-15, 21-25.

<sup>5</sup>Stanley M. Horton, "The Pentecostal Perspective," in *Five View on Sanctification*, p. 134.

may not fall, not through a second blessing, but from wholehearted consecration to the Lord.<sup>1</sup>

If such second levels of spirituality were possible, the Apostle Paul evidently knew nothing of them. He made no mention of them in his writings nor did any of the other New Testament writers. Of course advocates of these doctrines believe that they have scriptural authority and cite biblical support, but there are better explanations of these texts.

7:25 The solution to this dilemma is not escape from temptation, but victory over it "through Jesus Christ our Lord."

"This thanksgiving comes out of place. But St Paul cannot endure to leave the difficulty unsolved; he cannot consent to abandon his imaginary self to the depths of this despair. Thus he gives the solution parenthetically, though at the cost of interrupting his argument."<sup>2</sup>

"The source of Paul's wretchedness is clear. It is not a 'divided self' [i.e., old nature versus new nature], but the fact that the last hope of mankind, religion, has proven to be a broken reed. Through sin it is no longer a comfort but an accusation. Man needs not a law but deliverance."<sup>3</sup>

"If it were not for Christ, this iniquity that dwells in us would certainly be our ruin."<sup>4</sup>

"When we give up, he takes up."<sup>5</sup>

The last part of this verse is another summary. "I myself" contrasts with "Jesus Christ." Apparently Paul wanted to state

---

<sup>1</sup>See J. Robertson McQuilkin, "The Keswick Perspective," in *Five Views on Sanctification*, pp. 151-83.

<sup>2</sup>Lightfoot, p. 305.

<sup>3</sup>Barrett, p. 151.

<sup>4</sup>Henry, p. 1770.

<sup>5</sup>Johnson, *Discovering Romans*, p. 121.

again the essence of the struggle that he had just described in order to prepare his readers for the grand deliverance that he expounded in the next chapter.

There are two problems involving the interpretation of chapter 7 that merit additional attention. The first is this: Was Paul relating his own unique experience, or was he offering his own struggle as an example of something everyone experiences? Our experience would lead us to prefer the latter alternative, and the text supports it. Certainly Paul must have undergone this struggle, since he said he did. However, every human being does as well, because we all possess some knowledge of the law of God—at least by natural (general) revelation if not through special revelation or the Mosaic Law—as well as a sinful human nature.

The second question is this: Does the struggle that Paul described in verses 14 through 25 picture the experience of an unsaved person or a Christian?

#### **Arguments for the unsaved view**

##### **Pro**

##### **Con**

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| 1. This was the most popular view among the early church fathers.   | Other views held by the fathers have since proved false.  |
| 2. The terminology "fleshly" or unspiritual, and "sold into bondage to sin" or sold as a slave to sin (v. 14) fits an unbeliever better than a Christian. | These are appropriate terms to use in describing the Christian's relationship to his or her sinful human nature.  |
| 3. If 7:14 through 25 describes Christians, it conflicts with how Paul described them in 6:3.   | Two different relationships of the Christian are in view in these two passages: In chapter 6 our relationship to sin is in view, but in chapter 7 it is our relationship to our human nature that is in view. |



- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 4. 8:1 marks a change from dealing with the unsaved to the saved condition.  | 8:1 marks a transition from the domination of the sinful human nature to deliverance through Jesus Christ.                   |
| 5. The absence of references to the Holy Spirit and Jesus Christ, except in v. 25, shows that an unsaved person is in view here. | Paul's argument did not require these references since the conflict in view is between the Law and the flesh (human nature). |

### Arguments for the saved view

- | Pro   | Con  |
|---|--|
| 1. Augustine and the Reformers held this view.  | Older support by the church fathers favors the other view.   |
| 2. The change from past tense in 7:7 through 13 to present tense in 7:14 through 25 indicates that verses 14 through 25 describe Paul's post-conversion experience. | Paul used the present tense in verses 14 through 25 for vividness of expression.                                 |
| 3. If Paul described his pre-Christian life here, he contradicted what he said of it in Philippians 3:6.  | In Philippians 3 Paul described his standing before other people, but here he described his relationship to God. |
| 4. The argument of the epistle proceeds from justification (chs. 3—5) to sanctification (chs. 6—8).   | In chapter 6 Paul also referred to pre-conversion experience (vv. 6, 8).   |
| 5. The conflict is true to Christian experience.  | It is only apparently characteristic of Christian experience since the Christian is dead to sin.                 |

6. The last part of verse 25 implies that this conflict continues after one acknowledges that deliverance comes through Jesus Christ.	The end of verse 25 is only a final summary statement.
---	--

As mentioned previously, I believe the evidence for the saved view is stronger, as do many others.<sup>1</sup>

The conflict described in verses 13 through 25 is not the same one that Paul presented in Galatians 5:16 through 23. The opponent of the sinful human nature in Romans 7 is the whole Christian individual who wants to be obedient, but in Galatians 5 the opponent of the sinful human nature is the Holy Spirit. The condition of the believer in Romans is under the Law, but in Galatians it is under Law or grace. The result of the conflict in Romans is inevitable defeat, but in Galatians it is defeat or victory. The nature of the conflict in Romans is abnormal Christian experience, but in Galatians it is normal Christian experience.<sup>2</sup>

This chapter is very important for several reasons. First, it corrects the popular idea that our struggle with sin is only against specific sins and habits whereas it is also against our basic human nature. Second, it shows that human nature is not essentially good but bad. Third, it argues that progressive sanctification does not come by obeying laws, which is a form of legalism called nomism, but it comes apart from law. It also proves that doing right requires more than just determining to do it. All of these insights

---

<sup>1</sup>E.g., Calvin, 2:2:27; Henry, p. 1769; R. Jamieson, A. R. Fausset, and D. Brown, *Commentary Practical and Explanatory on the Whole Bible*, pp. 1157-58; Gaebelien, 3:2:44; Vine, pp. 105-9; Lenski, pp. 439-40; MacArthur, pp. 123-38; Cranfield, 1:365-70; Witmer, p. 467; Bruce, pp. 140-47; Wuest, 4:1:63; McGee, 4:692-94. Moo, pp. 442-51, has a good discussion of the problem, but he concluded that Paul was describing his own experience as a typical unregenerate Israelite, as did Anthony A. Hoekema, "Response to Walvoord," in *Five Views on Sanctification*, p 232. G. Campbell Morgan, *An Exposition of the Whole Bible*, p. 464, believed that Paul was describing his experience before his conversion. For another interpretation, see Walt Russell, "Insights from Postmodernism's Emphasis on Interpretive Communities in the Interpretation of Romans 7," *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 37:4 (December 1994):511-27.

<sup>2</sup>See Stanley D. Toussaint, "The Contrast Between the Spiritual Conflict in Romans 7 and Galatians 5," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 123:492 (October-December 1966):310-14; and Bruce, p. 144.

are necessary in order for us to appreciate what Paul proceeded to explain in chapter 8.

Related to the question of the believer's relationship to the law is the subject of legalism.

"Legalism is that fleshly attitude which conforms to a code in order to glorify self. It is not the code itself. Neither is it participation or nonparticipation [in activities]. It is the *attitude* with which we approach the standards of the code and ultimately the God who authored it."<sup>1</sup>

Legalism also involves judging the behavior of ourselves, or others, as acceptable or unacceptable to God by the standard of obedience to laws that we, rather than God, have imposed. Another definition of legalism (really nomism) is that it is the belief that I can obtain justification and/or sanctification simply by obeying rules.

<b>SOME RESULTS OF CHRISTIANS' UNION WITH CHRIST IN ROMANS 6 AND 7</b>		
<b>Chapter</b>	Six	Seven
<b>Subject</b>	The believer's relationship to sin	The believer's relationship to the Law
<b>Our former condition</b>	Enslavement to sin (cf. 6:1-11)	Obligation to the Law (of Moses; cf. 7:1-6)
<b>Our present condition</b>	No longer slaves of sin (cf. 6:12-14)	No longer obligated to keep the Law (cf. 7:7-12)
<b>Our present danger</b>	Becoming slaves to sin by yielding to it (cf. 6:15-18)	Becoming incapable of overcoming the flesh by trying to keep the Law (cf. 7:13-24)

<sup>1</sup>Charles C. Ryrie, *The Grace of God*, p. 120.

<b>Our present responsibility</b>	Present ourselves to God and our members as His instruments (cf. 6:19-23)	Trust and obey God who alone can enable us to overcome the flesh (cf. 7:25ff)
-----------------------------------	---	---

### C. THE BELIEVER'S RELATIONSHIP TO GOD CH. 8

"[Philipp] Spener is reported to have said that if holy Scripture was a ring, and the Epistle to the Romans its precious stone, chap. viii would be the sparkling point of the jewel."<sup>1</sup>

"It is undoubtedly the chapter of chapters for the life of the believer ..."<sup>2</sup>

As the fifth chapter climaxed Paul's revelation concerning the justification of the sinner, so the eighth chapter culminates the truth concerning the sanctification of the saint. Both chapters end by affirming the eternal security of the believer. In chapter 5 our security depends on the Son's life, and in chapter 8 it depends on the Spirit's power, both of which rest on the Father's love. This chapter contains the greatest concentration of references to the Holy Spirit in the New Testament—an average of one reference almost every two verses. Whereas there are about 30 occurrences of "I" in chapter 7, there are 21 references to the Holy Spirit in chapter 8. This chapter explains the benefits of sanctification made available through the presence and power of God's Holy Spirit who indwells every believer.<sup>3</sup>

"Having dealt in sequence with the continuing impact of the powers of sin and death in the life of the believer (chap. 6) and then with the ambivalent role of the law, whether determined by sin or by God (chap. 7), Paul returns to the conclusion reached in chap. 5 in the same clear-cut terms already used in 6:4 and 7:5, but now with the focus narrowing to the other factor (other than the death and resurrection of Christ), which

---

<sup>1</sup>Godet, p. 295.

<sup>2</sup>Griffith Thomas, *St. Paul's Epistle ...*, p. 200.

<sup>3</sup>See Dillow, pp. 358-82.

makes all the difference in the new age: the Spirit (*pneuma*, 21 times in chap. 8)."<sup>1</sup>

"It is altogether too narrow a view to see in this portion simply the antidote to the wretched state pictured in chapter 7. Actually the chapter gathers up various strands of thought from the entire discussion of both justification and sanctification and ties them together with the crowning knot of glorification."<sup>2</sup>

Lewis Sperry Chafer called this chapter: "The consummating Scripture on security."<sup>3</sup>

### 1. Our deliverance from the flesh by the power of the Spirit 8:1-11

Paul proceeded to state the believer's condition and then to explain it.

#### **The statement of the believer's condition 8:1-4**

8:1 "Therefore" introduces a conclusion based on everything that Paul wrote from chapter 3 on, not just chapter 7. It continues the thought that Paul broke off in 7:6.

Paul reaffirmed justification as the indispensable basis for sanctification.<sup>4</sup> A Christian must believe that he or she has permanent acceptance with God before he or she will grow much in grace and godliness.

"Romans 3:20 shows the 'therefore' of condemnation; but Romans 8:1 gives the 'therefore' of *no* condemnation ..."<sup>5</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Dunn, p. 412.

<sup>2</sup>Harrison, p. 85.

<sup>3</sup>Lewis S. Chafer, "The Consummating Scripture on Security," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 175:698 (April-June 2018):131-44.

<sup>4</sup>For three ways of interpreting the basis of no condemnation, see Chuck Lowe, "'There Is No Condemnation' (Romans 8:1): But Why Not?" *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 42:2 (June 1999):231-50.

<sup>5</sup>Wiersbe, 1:538.

No condemnation is different from no judgment (2 Cor. 5:10). No "condemnation" (Gr. *katakrima*, penal servitude) means that God will never condemn believers to an eternity separate from Himself because of our sins. The reason is not that the believer has been forgiven, which he has, but because he or she is "in Christ Jesus." The Savior has suffered the judgment for our sins as our Substitute. He will experience no condemnation, and we, as those who are in Him, will not either. Note the absolute force of this great promise. We are eternally secure!

"The Law condemns; but the believer has a new relationship to the Law, and therefore he cannot be condemned."<sup>1</sup>

James Stewart argued that the concept of being "in Christ" (union with Him), rather than justification or election or eschatology or any of the other apostolic themes, is the real key to understanding Paul's thought and experience (cf. 6:11; et al).<sup>2</sup>

8:2 Paul used "law" here in the sense of "principle" (cf. 7:23). He was not referring to the Mosaic Law (cf. 7:21). "The law of the Spirit" and the law of sin" refer to the certainty and regularity that characterize the operations of the Spirit and sin. The Spirit's work that comes to us because of faith in Jesus Christ leads to fullness of "life," but sin leads to "death." Ultimate ends are again in view.

"Both the Spirit and sin and death are called the law because of the constancy of their influence and action."<sup>3</sup>

"The subject here is no longer Christ's work for us, but the Spirit's work within us. Without the Spirit within as a law of life, there would be nothing but condemnation: for the new creature has no power within himself apart from the blessed Spirit,—as

---

<sup>1</sup>Ibid.

<sup>2</sup>James S. Stewart, *A Man in Christ*. See especially, pp. vii, 147.

<sup>3</sup>Mickelsen, p. 1205.

against a life of perpetual bondage to the flesh,—  
'the end of which things is death' (6.21)."<sup>1</sup>

"... the Spirit brings life because it essentially *is*  
life."<sup>2</sup>

The law of sin is like the law of gravity: it pulls us down. But the law of the Spirit is like the law of aerodynamics: it overcomes the law of sin, lifts us up, and enables us to be victorious over the flesh.

8:3 The Mosaic Law cannot set us free from sin and death (v. 2; cf. ch. 7) because its only appeal is to the willpower of man. It has to act through the flesh.<sup>3</sup> It urges us intellectually to obey God, but it does not provide sufficient power for obedience. Fortunately God sent "His own Son," out of the depths of His love, to deal effectively with sin (cf. Heb. 10:1-10).

Paul referred to both the person and work of Christ in this verse. Jesus Christ came "in the likeness of sinful flesh" (cf. Phil. 2:7), but not in sinful flesh, or in the likeness of flesh. He was both sinless and a real human being.

"For sin," the literal Greek rendering, has a wider connotation than "as an offering for sin" or "a sin offering," and it is the better translation. The Law could not condemn (doom) sin. It could only identify it as sin. Consequently God sent His own Son to condemn sin.

"The battle was joined and the triumph secured in that same flesh which in us is the seat and agent of sin."<sup>4</sup>

"For all that are Christ's both the damning and the domineering power of sin is broken."<sup>5</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Newell, p. 288.

<sup>2</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 190.

<sup>3</sup>See Alford, 2:2:386.

<sup>4</sup>Murray, 1:282.

<sup>5</sup>Henry, p. 1771.

"The 'law of double jeopardy' states that a man cannot be tried twice for the same crime. Since Jesus Christ paid the penalty for your sins, and since you are 'in Christ,' God will not condemn you."<sup>1</sup>

The law of double jeopardy is a universally recognized principle of justice. It is unjust to punish two people for the same crime unless, of course, more than one person was involved in committing it.

8:4 Here the purpose of the Incarnation appears in the context of the struggle of chapter 7. God fulfills the Law's requirement in believers by His Spirit, who indwells and empowers us. The Law's requirement is obedience to God. However, obedience is not automatic simply because the Spirit indwells us. The Spirit enables us to fulfill this requirement (i.e., obedience) if and as we "walk" "according to the Spirit" rather than walking "according to the flesh." Walking "according to the Spirit" means living in submission to and dependence on the Spirit (cf. Gal. 5:16). Walking "according to the flesh" means behaving as the flesh dictates and allowing our sinful nature to govern our lives.

"Walking in the flesh means that whatever a person does, both good and bad, is done in disregard to God."<sup>2</sup>

"'To walk according to the flesh,' then, is to have one's life determined and directed by the values of 'this world,' of the world in rebellion against God. It is a lifestyle that is purely 'human' in its orientation. To 'walk according to the Spirit,' on the other hand, is to live under the control, and according to the values, of the 'new age,' created

---

<sup>1</sup>Wiersbe, 1:539.

<sup>2</sup>Fruchtenbaum, *The Book ...*, pp. 150-51.



and dominated by God's Spirit as his eschatological gift."<sup>1</sup>

"The law's requirement will be fulfilled by the determination of the direction, the set, of our lives by the Spirit, by our being enabled again and again to decide for the Spirit and against the flesh, to turn our backs more and more upon our own insatiable egotism and to turn our faces more and more toward the freedom which the Spirit of God has given us."<sup>2</sup>

"To run and work the law commands,  
Yet gives me neither feet nor hands;  
But better news the gospel brings:  
It bids me fly, and gives me wings."<sup>3</sup>

"The importance of these verses [1-4] lies in the fact that they provide a summary of chs. v. to viii., and indicate in brief but sufficient form the secrets of Christian holiness."<sup>4</sup>

### The explanation of the believer's condition 8:5-11

"The antithesis of Flesh and Spirit is the subject of the next section."<sup>5</sup>

8:5 Here Paul began to explain the difference between "flesh" and "Spirit." This distinction is difficult to grasp because both terms have more than one meaning. To "walk according to the flesh" (v. 4) means to carry out in conduct what the sinful human nature desires. To be "in accord with the flesh" (v. 5) means to allow the human nature to dominate one's life. To be "in the flesh" (v. 8) is to be unregenerate, to be devoid of the Spirit.

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 485. Cf. Kevin W. McFadden, "The Fulfillment of the Law's *Dikaioma*: Another Look at Romans 8:1-4," *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 52:3 (September 2009):483-97.

<sup>2</sup>Cranfield, 1:385.

<sup>3</sup>John Bunyan. Quoted in Bruce, p. 154.

<sup>4</sup>Griffith Thomas, *St. Paul's Epistle ...*, p. 205.

<sup>5</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 194.

The "Spirit" seems from the context to refer to the Holy Spirit rather than to the regenerated spirit of man. Those who prefer the second view tend to describe man as having two natures: an old sinful one, and a new regenerated one (cf. Gal. 5:16-17). In favor of the former view, the chapter began with a clear reference to the Holy Spirit (v. 2). Additional following references to "spirit" (Gr. *pneuma*) would therefore normally refer to the same Holy Spirit. Furthermore, it is reasonable that in identifying the basis for Christian victory, Paul would point to the ultimate source, the Holy Spirit, rather than to a secondary agent: our regenerated human spirit.

8:6 "The mind set on" following "the flesh" concentrates on and desires the things of the flesh (cf. Phil. 2:5; Col. 3:2). The end of that attitude is ultimately "death." However, "the mind set on" yielding to "the [Holy] Spirit" will experience "life and peace." Peace with God seems to be in view here. Yet whenever there is peace with God, peace with other people normally follows.

"... this does not so much mean that a man living after the flesh is without the life of God, as that death is the end of this line of conduct, chap. vi. 23, Gal. vi. 8."<sup>1</sup>

8:7-8 The mind set on the flesh is essentially "hostile toward God." To set one's mind on the flesh is contrary to God's law. Here "the law of God" refers to whatever God requires.

"'Being in the flesh' may almost be defined as 'pleasing (not God but) oneself'.<sup>2</sup>

From the end of verse 7 to the end of verse 8 it seems clear that Paul wanted "to expose the flesh in its stark reality as being totally alien to God and his purpose."<sup>3</sup> What interests a person reveals his or her essential character. It is possible to "walk according to the flesh" (vv. 4-5) and not to be "in the flesh," however. In other words, it is possible to live like an

---

<sup>1</sup>Denney, 2:646.

<sup>2</sup>Barrett, p. 158.

<sup>3</sup>Harrison, p. 89.

unregenerate person even though one has experienced regeneration.

Some expositors have concluded that verse 8 teaches that regeneration precedes faith.<sup>1</sup> However, Acts 16:31 says, "Believe in the Lord Jesus, and you will be saved." In this text faith precedes regeneration. The solution is probably that these two things happen simultaneously.

8:9 "However" marks a contrast. Paul's readers were "not in the flesh" (unregenerate). They were "in the Spirit" (regenerate). They had the indwelling Holy Spirit. We could translate the first "if" as "since" (first class condition in Greek) because here it represents a condition that Paul assumed was true to reality ("since indeed the Spirit of God dwells in you"). Everyone who trusts in Jesus Christ in the age in which we live possesses the indwelling Holy Spirit (cf. Eph. 1:13; 1 Cor. 12:13).

"Here the great mark of a true Christian is, that the Spirit of God dwells in him."<sup>2</sup>

"This teaches the doctrine of the Tri-unity of the Godhead; for the Holy Spirit is both the Spirit of God and the Spirit of Christ."<sup>3</sup>

This is one of the clearest statements in Scripture that corrects the false notion that baptism with the Spirit is a second work of grace for the Christian.

"Nowhere in Scripture do we find a clearer indication that the Spirit enters a person's life at the moment of conversion (cf. also 1 Cor 12:13). If the Spirit needed to wait for some subsequent commitment to holiness, it follows that he would be absent between conversion and that later point in time. But that cannot be because Paul clearly

---

<sup>1</sup>E.g., Johnson, *Discovering Romans*, p. 128.

<sup>2</sup>Newell, p. 299.

<sup>3</sup>Vine, p. 116.

indicated that a person without the Spirit does not belong to Christ."<sup>1</sup>

There are a few instances in the Book of Acts where the Spirit came on believers after they became Christians (Acts 2:4; 8:17; 10:44-45; 19:6). But these were exceptional occasions in which the coming of the Spirit was dramatically given in order to impress people with the Spirit's coming on Jews, Samaritans, Gentiles, and John the Baptist's disciples.

8:10 "If" is again "Since." Christ is indeed in every believer even though the believer will die because of sin (cf. vv. 9, 11; Eph. 3:16-17).

"The spirit" in this verse also probably refers to the Holy Spirit.<sup>2</sup> The context favors this interpretation, as does the sense of the verse. "Alive" is literally "life" (cf. v. 2). The meaning of the clause evidently is this: The Holy Spirit is the source of spiritual life for the redeemed person who now possesses Jesus Christ's imputed righteousness.

"... whenever you see a Christian living the Christian life, you are witnessing a resurrection miracle!"<sup>3</sup>

The "body" represents the whole person, not just his or her physical shell. This was Paul's normal meaning when he used this word.<sup>4</sup> Here he meant by "is dead" that the body is mortal, that it remains subject to death because of sin.

8:11 "The Spirit" in view is again God's Spirit. The point is that the same Holy Spirit who raised Jesus will also raise ("give life to") believers' mortal bodies.

---

<sup>1</sup>Mounce, pp. 178-79.

<sup>2</sup>See Sanday and Headlam, p. 197.

<sup>3</sup>Zane Hodges, "The Death/Life Option," *Grace Evangelical Society News* 6:11 (November 1991):3.

<sup>4</sup>*Theological Dictionary of the New Testament*, s. v. "soma," by E. Schweizer and F. Baumgärtel, 7(1971):1064.

"The Spirit is both the instrumental cause of the resurrection-act and the permanent substratum of the resurrection-life."<sup>1</sup>

"The link which connects the believer with Christ, and makes him participate in Christ's resurrection, is the possession of His Spirit (cp. I Thess. iv. 14 ...)."<sup>2</sup>

This verse constitutes a powerful argument for the physical resurrection of believers. It also contains the longest title of the Holy Spirit in the New Testament ("the Spirit of Him who raised Jesus from the dead").<sup>3</sup>

As noted above (6:6), sometimes Christians describe the change that has taken place in believers, when they trusted in Christ, as having received a new nature. The idea is that unbelievers have an old unregenerate nature, and that Christians now have two natures: the old nature and a new nature. Sometimes these two natures are seen warring against each other, like two lion cubs within the believer.

However I and others prefer a different explanation of the inner makeup of the Christian that we believe is more biblical. Rather than getting a new nature, the New Testament says that we get the Holy Spirit (v. 9). God's nature now becomes a part of our total makeup, which already includes our old sinful human nature. The New Testament speaks of our "old self" (Rom. 6:6; Eph. 4:22; Col. 3:9), which refers to who we were before we trusted Christ. That "old self" contained a sinful human nature. But now we are to "put on the new self" (Eph. 4:24; Col. 3:10), which means that we are to live like the new people that we are, having received the Holy Spirit (though still possessing a sinful human nature).

## 2. Our new relationship to God 8:12-17

Paul proceeded to apply this truth and then to point out evidence of the believer's new relationship to God.

---

<sup>1</sup>Gerhardus Vos, *The Pauline Eschatology*, p. 169.

<sup>2</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 198.

<sup>3</sup>Vine, p. 117.

**The application of the believer's condition 8:12-13**

8:12 Because of what God has done for us (vv. 1-11) believers have an obligation to respond to Him appropriately. However we can only do so with the Spirit's help. Paul stated only the negative side of our responsibility here. He could have gone on to say "... but to God, to live according to the Spirit." He planned to stress that in the verses that follow.

This verse teaches clearly that the believer still has a sinful human nature within him, even though he has died with Christ. God does not eradicate the believer's "flesh" at conversion. We can still "live according to the flesh" if we choose to do so. But we must not live according to it. Progressive sanctification is not something the Christian may take or leave. God commanded us to pursue it (cf. Titus 2:12; 2 Pet. 1:3-11; 3:18).

8:13 Christians who consistently follow the dictates of the flesh can look forward to "death." This cannot be spiritual death (separation from God forever) in view of specific promises to the contrary (e.g., vv. 1, 31-39). Therefore it must mean physical death. Sin produces death in many forms, for example, separation of the body from the soul (physical death, which may be premature for those who follow the flesh; cf. 1 Cor. 11:30; 1 John 5:16). It may be separation of the person from others (death in social relationships), or separation of the person from himself (psychological alienation and mental disorders). Of course unbelievers who consistently follow the dictates of the flesh also experience death.

Conversely believers who follow God's will with the enablement of the Holy Spirit and put the deeds of the body (i.e., the works of the flesh; cf. 6:6; Col. 3:5) to death will experience life. It is possible to possess eternal life and yet not experience it fully (John 10:10). Only Christians who follow God faithfully will experience their eternal life to its fullest potential. This fullness of life involves psychological and social wholeness as well as physical wholeness, under normal circumstances.

The present tense of the verbs is significant. This tense stresses the necessity of continually putting to death the deeds of the flesh. Paul viewed the presentation of ourselves to God as an initial act of commitment (6:13; 12:1), but he wrote that we must daily and hourly choose to curb our flesh (cf. 13:14).

"Here is a terrible warning: ... It is one of the great red lights by which God keeps His elect out of fatal paths."<sup>1</sup>

"... we must note most carefully that a holy life is to be lived *by us*. It is not that we have any power,—we have none. But God's Spirit dwells in us for the express object of being called 'upon by us to put to death the doings of the body.' Self-control is one of that sweet cluster called 'the fruit of the Spirit,' in Galatians 5:22."<sup>2</sup>

### The confirmation of the believer's condition 8:14-17

Verses 14 through 17 explain the Spirit's ministry of confirming the reality of the believer's position as a son of God to him or her.<sup>3</sup> Paul believed that the believer who is aware of his or her secure position will be more effective in controlling his or her flesh (cf. 6:1-11).

8:14 Paul wrote to the Galatians that the law leads people to Christ (Gal. 3:24). The Holy Spirit does this too (John 16:8-11). After believers come to Christ the Holy Spirit continues to lead them in the moral will of God. The Holy Spirit leads every true child of God (Gal. 5:18). He goes before them and expects them to follow Him, like a shepherd expects his sheep to follow him. However, we can choose to follow or not follow our Shepherd, to walk according to the Spirit or to walk according to the flesh (v. 13). The Spirit leads us objectively through the Scriptures, and subjectively by His internal promptings and providential

---

<sup>1</sup>Newell, p. 307.

<sup>2</sup>Ibid., p. 309.

<sup>3</sup>On the link between this section and chapter 9 see George C. Gianoulis, "Is Sonship in Romans 8:14-17 a Link with Romans 9?" *Bibliotheca Sacra* 166:661 (January-March 2009):70-83.

guidance (John 20:31; Rom 8:16; Gal. 4:6; 1 John 3:24; 5:13).<sup>1</sup> Another view is that to be led by the Spirit here, and in Galatians 5:18, means that the Spirit determines the direction of one's life as a whole, rather than that He guides us day by day.<sup>2</sup>

"There is deep mystery, no doubt, in the great double fact of [*sic*] God is working in us to will, and on the other hand, of our choosing His will, moment by moment. We can only affirm that both are taught in Scripture ..."<sup>3</sup>

The Holy Spirit acts as a guide for the Christian by showing him or her the way to go, like a guide goes before hikers on a mountain pathway, blazing a safe trail for them. However, as with hikers, Christians do not have to follow their Guide. We can turn aside, and sometimes do, taking a more dangerous path.

"The difference between *huios* [son] and *teknon* [child] appears to be that whereas *teknon* denotes the natural relationship of child to parent, *huios* implies, in addition to this, the recognized status and legal privileges reserved for sons."<sup>4</sup>

8:15 Unlike sin, the Spirit does not enslave us. He does not compel or force us to do God's will as slaves of God. Rather, He appeals to us to submit voluntarily, as "sons and daughters" of God. The "spirit of adoption" in view is probably the Holy Spirit, who has made us God's sons and daughters by regeneration and adoption.

"Abba" and "Father" are equivalent terms, the first being a transliteration of the Aramaic word *abba* and the second a translation of the Greek *pater* (cf. Gal. 4:6). Probably Paul used the Aramaic as well as the Greek term in order to highlight the intimate relationship the Christian disciple enjoys with God. The

---

<sup>1</sup>See Bernard Ramm, *The Witness of the Spirit*.

<sup>2</sup>E.g., Moo, p. 498.

<sup>3</sup>Newell, p. 310.

<sup>4</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 202.



Lord Jesus revealed this intimate relationship during His training of the Twelve (Mark 14:36).<sup>1</sup> In their translations, J. B. Phillips paraphrased "Abba! Father!" as "Father, my Father," and Arthur Way rendered it, "My Father, my own dear Father."

"Adoption" is another legal term (cf. justification). It indicates the legal bestowal of a legal standing. Both adoption and justification result in a permanent condition, and they both rest on the love and grace of God.<sup>2</sup>

"Paul could hardly have chosen a better term than 'adoption' to characterize this peace and security. The word denoted the Greek, and particularly Roman, legal institution whereby one can 'adopt' a child and confer on that child all the legal rights and privileges that would ordinarily accrue to a natural child. However, while the institution is a Greco-Roman one, the underlying concept is rooted in the OT and Judaism [i.e., God's adoption of Israel]."<sup>3</sup>

"... the Jews did not practice adoption ..."<sup>4</sup>

8:16 Many people believe that God has provided the believer with two witnesses to his or her salvation: the Holy Spirit, and the believer's human spirit (cf. Deut. 17:6; Matt. 18:16). The former witness is objective in Scripture (cf. v. 14), while the latter is subjective in the believer.

Another view is that the Holy Spirit bears witness to God when we use our human spirits to pray (v. 15).<sup>5</sup> Incidentally, this second reference to spirit ("our spirit") is probably the only one in Romans 8 that is not a reference to the Holy Spirit.

---

<sup>1</sup>See Joachim Jeremias, *The Central Message of the New Testament*, p. 28.

<sup>2</sup>See Francis Lyall, "Roman Law in the Writings of Paul—Adoption," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 88 (December 1969):458-66.

<sup>3</sup>Moo, p. 501. Cf. Bruce, p. 157; Ryrie, *Basic Theology*, pp. 306-7.

<sup>4</sup>Barrett, p. 163.

<sup>5</sup>See Griffith Thomas, *St. Paul's Epistle ...*, pp. 216; Robert N. Wilkin, "Assurance by Inner Witness?" *Grace Evangelical Society News* 8:2 (March-April 1993):2-3; idem, *Confident in Christ*, pp. 69-71.

"This verse provides ground for the assurance of salvation on the part of believers. At the same time it bears testimony against the doctrine of pantheism, which confounds the human spirit with the Divine."<sup>1</sup>

The term "children" in Romans 8 identifies our family relationship based on regeneration, whereas the term "sons" stresses our legal standing based on adoption. We are both God's children, by new birth, and His sons, by adoption (cf. v. 14).

8:17 Being adopted children of God makes us His "heirs" (cf. 1 Pet. 1:3-4).

"Not least of importance in the concept of sonship is the fact that it links into the theme of inheritance, not unnaturally since the primary purpose of adoption was to provide a suitable heir."<sup>2</sup>

We inherit (are "heirs") along "with Christ" our Brother (v. 29). We inherit both sufferings now, as His disciples, and glory, most of which lies in the future (cf. 1 Pet. 4:13).<sup>3</sup> The phrase "if indeed" seeks to render the first class condition in the Greek, that in this case we could translate "since." Just as surely as we share in His sufferings now (Gr. *sumpaschomen*, any sufferings we may experience because we live for Him, not just those connected with our bearing verbal witness for Christ), we will also share in His glory in the future. This is a reference to the glorification that every believer will experience at the end of his or her life (vv. 18-25). Our glory then will be somewhat proportionate to our suffering for His sake as His disciples now (cf. 1 Pet. 4:12-19).

The New Testament teaches that the amount of inheritance the children of God receive will vary depending on our faithfulness to God (Luke 19:11-27). However there is no

---

<sup>1</sup>Vine, pp. 120-21.

<sup>2</sup>Dunn, p. 462.

<sup>3</sup>See López, "A Study ... Inheriting ...," pp. 444-46.

doubt that all Christians are the heirs of God, and all will inherit glorification as well as many other blessings (cf. Eph. 1:3-14; 1 Pet. 1:3-12).<sup>1</sup>

"All regenerate men have God as their inheritance, or as Paul puts it, are 'heirs of God' (Rom. 8:17; Gal. 4:7). That heirship is received on the basis of only one work, the work of believing. But there is another inheritance in the New Testament, an inheritance which, like that of the Israelites, is merited. They are also heirs of the kingdom and joint-heirs with the Messiah (2 Tim. 2:12; Rom. 8:17)."<sup>2</sup>

This verse is not teaching that experiencing glorification, which is the third stage of every believer's salvation, depends on our suffering for Jesus' sake. God will eventually glorify every Christian: those who take a stand for the Lord as well as those who do not (vv. 29-39).

"Such passages leave *no room at all* for a 'partial rapture!' *All* the saints will share Christ's glory."<sup>3</sup>

### **3. Our present sufferings and future glory 8:18-25**

Paul proceeded to expound on the thought that he introduced at the end of verse 17. This passage gives a very wide perspective of God's great plan of redemption, which is the heart of Paul's theology.<sup>4</sup>

8:18 In the light of eternity we should view the cost of suffering with Jesus Christ now as insignificant ("not worthy to be compared") in view of "the glory" that lies ahead for us (cf. 2 Cor. 4:17). The Greek word *pathemata* means "sufferings" for any reason and in any form. By "glory" Paul meant the glory

---

<sup>1</sup>For a study of the variable factors involved in inheriting, see Zane C. Hodges, *The Hungry Inherit*.

<sup>2</sup>Dillow, p. 55. See also William N. W. Pass III, "A Reexamination of Calvin's Approach to Romans 8:17," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 170:677 (January-March 2013):69-81.

<sup>3</sup>Newell, p. 317.

<sup>4</sup>See Don N. Howell Jr., "The Center of Pauline Theology," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 151:601 (January-March 1994):50-70.

that we will experience at our glorification (v. 17). Our glorification is the third and final aspect of our salvation in which God will deliver us from the presence of sin forever. The Greek preposition *eis* can mean either "to" or "in" (NIV), and it probably includes both ideas here in view of the vastness of this glory. We will not only see glory, but we will also display glory.<sup>1</sup>

"There is something to come, something behind the curtain, that will outshine all."<sup>2</sup>

8:19 Paul broadened his view of glorification to include all of creation. He personified it as leaning forward eagerly (intensely or longingly straining or looking) in anticipation of the great day when God will fully redeem it too (cf. Gal. 5:5; Phil. 3:20; Heb. 9:28). Then "the sons and daughters of God" will be revealed as what we really are, whereas now we appear simply as Adam's sons and daughters. Paul mentioned "the creation" here in order to emphasize the certainty of future salvation for Christians.<sup>3</sup>

"... the word here translated 'revealing' is *apokalupsis*, a removal of a covering,—as when some wonderful statue has been completed and a veil thrown over it, people assemble for the 'unveiling' of this work of art. It will be as when sky rockets are sent up on a festival night: rockets which, covered with brown paper, seem quite common and unattractive, but up they are sent into the air and then they are revealed in all colors of beauty, and the multitude waiting below shout in admiration. Now the saints are wrapped up in the common brown paper of flesh, looking outwardly like other folks. But the whole creation is waiting for their unveiling at Christ's coming, for

---

<sup>1</sup>Alford, 2:2:393.

<sup>2</sup>Henry, p. 1772.

<sup>3</sup>Barrett, p. 165.

they are connected with Christ, one with Him, and are to be glorified *with Him* at His coming."<sup>1</sup>

8:20 Because of the Fall God subjected the whole creation to "futility" (frustration). Consequently it never reaches the perfection that He originally intended it to achieve. Probably God is in view as the one who subjected it, though Satan and Adam were instrumental in that action.

8:21 In view of prophecies concerning creation's restoration during Messiah's earthly reign, that time was probably in Paul's mind when he wrote this verse (e.g., Jer. 31:12-14; 33). Paul did not have the destruction of the present earth in view, which will happen at the end of Messiah's earthly reign (cf. 2 Pet. 3:11-13). He was writing of its transformation at the beginning of that reign.

8:22 "The whole creation" (excluding man, v. 23) acts as though it is going through birth pains in that it is straining to produce its fruit. Its sufferings are both a result of past events, and they are a sign of future deliverance (cf. v. 20; Matt. 19:28).

8:23 The saints share this sense of groaning and anticipation that Paul described the whole creation feeling. God will fully redeem both it and us finally. However only the saints have "the first fruits of the Spirit."

God commanded the Israelites to present a portion of their harvest that ripened first (the "first fruits") as an offering to Him (Exod. 23:19; Neh. 10:35). This offering acknowledged that the whole harvest was from Him and that it was really His. It was an offering that the Israelites made in faith, confident that the rest of the harvest would follow.

Like these first fruits, God's gift of the Spirit at the commencement of the believer's Christian life is His pledge that He will complete the process of salvation. Even though He has redeemed and adopted us, there is more of redemption and adoption for us to experience in the future (Eph. 1:13-14; 4:30; 1 John 3:2). When will that take place? It will happen at

---

<sup>1</sup>Newell, p. 320.

the Rapture, when He glorifies our bodies by making them immortal (Phil. 3:20-21; cf. 1 Cor. 15:44; John 14:1-2). The judgment seat of Christ will follow, when we will receive more of our glorious inheritance (1 Pet. 1:3-4; 1 Cor. 3:12-15; 2 Cor. 5:10).

"The 'adoption' here is the full manifestation of the status of believers when they are invested as sons and daughters of God (cf. verses 14-17) and enter on the inheritance which is theirs by virtue of that status. 'The redemption of our bodies' is the resurrection, a theme on which Paul had recently enlarged in 2 Corinthians 4:7—5:10."<sup>1</sup>

8:24-25 In the meantime, we Christians should look forward with hope to what God has promised and patiently endure with perseverance our present sufferings (cf. 5:4).

"The point of these two verses is that the attitude of hope, so distinctive of the Christian, implies that there is more in store for him than anything that is his already."<sup>2</sup>

#### **4. Our place in God's sovereign plan 8:26-30**

In the foregoing verses Paul spoke of God's plan for creation and the believer. In these verses he showed how central a place His children occupy in that plan that He is bringing to completion in history.

8:26 Hope helps us in our sufferings (vv. 24-25) and so does the Holy Spirit. The context suggests that our "weakness" probably refers to all our limitations as creatures (cf. v. 23; 2 Cor. 12:9-10).

Some translators understood Paul to be saying: We do not know how to pray as we should, which implies ignorance concerning the proper method and procedure in prayer. Other translators thought he meant, "We do not know what to pray

---

<sup>1</sup>Bruce, pp. 164-65.

<sup>2</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 210.

for as we should," implying ignorance regarding the content and subjects of our praying. The Greek text permits either interpretation, though it favors the former one. Jesus gave instruction to His disciples about both content and method in prayer (Matt. 6:9-15; Luke 11:2-4).

Perhaps what Paul meant was this: We know how to approach God in prayer and the general subjects that we should pray about, but we struggle with exactly how to pray most effectively, and exactly what to pray about. The basic principle of effective praying is that it must be in harmony with the will of God to be effective (1 John 5:14-15; John 14:13; 15:16; 16:23-24).<sup>1</sup> However, what the precise will of God is is often hard for us to know. The Holy Spirit then comes to our aid: "the Spirit Himself intercedes for us." To intercede means to pray for someone else.

"Groanings" expresses feelings of compassion for our weak condition. The Holy Spirit requests the Father's help for us with deep compassion (cf. Eph. 6:18). Essentially He prays for the glory of God to be revealed in us through our sanctification.<sup>2</sup>

"We cannot without God, and he will not without us."<sup>3</sup>

"... the Holy Spirit does not and cannot groan; these groans are ours. ... These 'groanings' come from our own hearts even as Paul says that 'he who searches the hearts' knows what they mean (v. 27). They are neither uttered nor utterable; they do not rise to our lips in inarticulate sounds."<sup>4</sup>

"I take it that Paul is saying, then, that our failure to know God's will and consequent inability to

---

<sup>1</sup>See Thomas L. Constable, *Talking to God: What the Bible Teaches about Prayer*, pp. 175-76.

<sup>2</sup>See Donnie Berry, "Groaning for Glory: Another Look at the Spirit's Intercession in Romans 8:26-27," *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 63:2 (June 2020):281-96.

<sup>3</sup>Henry, p. 1773.

<sup>4</sup>Lenski, pp. 547-48.

petition God specifically and assuredly is met by God's Spirit, who himself expresses to God those intercessory petitions that perfectly match the will of God. When we do not know what to pray for—yes, even when we pray for things that are not best for us—we need not despair, for we can depend on the Spirit's ministry of perfect intercession 'on our behalf.'"<sup>1</sup>

Imagine a loving parent seeking to help a child with a speech problem or hearing impairment. As the youngster struggles to express his feelings and desires, the parent imparts knowledge, and with his own lips carefully tries to formulate what the child wants to say. This is a picture of how the Holy Spirit catches up our deepest longings and aspirations and brings them in line with the Father's ultimate purposes for us.

We should not confuse these "groanings" with praying in tongues. This passage promises all Christians God's help, not just those who had the gift of tongues. Furthermore, the Scriptures never connect the gift of tongues with intercessory prayer. This verse is saying that the Holy Spirit prays "for" us, not that He prays through us to the Father.<sup>2</sup>

8:27 The Father understands the Spirit's intercession for the saints even though we ourselves cannot hear it. We can be assured that His intercession is effective in securing God's help for us because the Spirit prays in harmony with God's will.

Thus God Himself, by the Spirit, comes to our aid whenever we need help. He also assures us in His Word that we will get assistance from the Father (John 16:23). The consequence of this promise should be that when we feel frustrated about our inability to pray about a particular need we can relax. We can have confidence that our compassionate God understands just

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 526.

<sup>2</sup>See Cranfield, 1:423.



how we feel and what we want or need, and He will respond according to His will.<sup>1</sup>

"The assurance Paul feels able to give is that God, who looks beyond outward appearance and mere words, recognizes full well what the inarticulate groans signify—namely, that basic orientation to and dependence on God which still looks to God even when it has nothing to say."<sup>2</sup>

8:28

"We have been dealing in the first part of the chapter with the human will and its consent to walk by the Spirit. Not so from the 28th verse to the chapter's end. It will be *all God* from now on!"<sup>3</sup>

Different translators have interpreted this verse in different ways. Some saw "God" as the subject and have translated it "God causes ...". Others believed that "all things" is the subject and rendered it "all things God works ..." (NIV). However, the differences are not significant. The whole chapter, even all of Scripture, presents God as sovereign over all the affairs of life.<sup>4</sup> Consequently we know what Paul meant. God orders all the events of life, not just the intercession of the indwelling Spirit, so that they culminate in the blessing of His children (cf. vv. 26-27).

"All things" means just that: everything, "every event of life."<sup>5</sup> In the context, these "things" include the misfortunes that the believer experiences. The "good" is what is good from God's perspective, and, in view of verses 18 through 27, conformity to the Son of God is particularly prominent (v. 29). "Those who love God" could be a group of believers who love God more than others. However, since Paul described them from the divine side as the elect of God ("those called"), they must refer

---

<sup>1</sup> See Curtis C. Mitchell, "The Holy Spirit's Intercessory Ministry," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 139:555 (July-September 1982):230-42.

<sup>2</sup> Dunn, p. 493.

<sup>3</sup> Newell, p. 330.

<sup>4</sup> See A. W. Tozer, *The Knowledge of the Holy*, pp. 115-20, for his helpful discussion of God's attribute of sovereignty.

<sup>5</sup> Alford, 2:2:397.

to all Christians (cf. 1 John 4:19). This is the only place in Romans where Paul wrote of the believer's love for God. Everywhere else he referred to God's love for the believer.

This verse does not say that God causes all things—period. Nowhere in Scripture do we read that God causes sin or evil. He permits these things, but that is much different than causing them.<sup>1</sup> Therefore when tragedy touches a believer, we should not conclude that this is one of the "all things" that God causes. Rather, this verse says that God brings good out of all things, even tragedies, for the Christian. The causes of tragedy are Satan, the sinful choices of people, and the consequences of living in a sinful world (cf. James 1:13-14): Satan, sin, and sinners. Even though God permits and allows bad things to happen, Scripture never lays the blame for these things on God, and neither should we.

"Sometimes Romans 8:28 is not easy to accept. But Paul did not say, 'We understand *how* all things work together for good' to the believer. He said, 'We *know* that they do.' We know many things we do not understand."<sup>2</sup>

8:29 Paul next explained God's calling in terms of His foreknowledge and predestination. It is a mistake to conclude that God knew beforehand who would believe on His Son and then predestined those individuals for salvation. Foreknowledge is a term that specifically describes God's decision to elect: to choose to bless someone (cf. ch. 9; 1 Pet. 1:20). Notice that it is only those whom He foreknows that He predestines, not everyone. This indicates that a limited foreknowledge is in view, not just general knowledge of everyone and everything, which God possesses.

Foreknowledge here does not mean simply knowledge of an event that precedes that event. If God knows that something will happen before it does, He is in some sense responsible for it happening, since He is sovereign (cf. 11:2; Acts 2:23; 1 Pet.

---

<sup>1</sup>See Charles R. Swindoll, *The Mystery of God's Will*, pp. 18-28.

<sup>2</sup>Vance Havner, *Vance Havner: Just a Preacher*, p. 157.

1:2). Yet, as mentioned above, the Bible does not regard Him as the direct cause of all that happens, or blameworthy because bad things happen. The reason for God's choice of the elect was not human merit (Eph. 1:4), or even the faith of the elect, but God's love and purpose (v. 28; cf. Deut. 7:6-8).<sup>1</sup>

"Theologians rightly point out that prior to knowledge must be the divine decree. Unless God determines in some sense that something will happen, he cannot 'know' that it will. For God to foreknow requires an earlier decree."<sup>2</sup>

"Nothing could be foreknown as certain that had not been made certain by foreordination, nor could anything be foreordained that was not foreknown."<sup>3</sup>

Of three passages bearing on the relationship between foreknowledge and foreordination, two mention foreknowledge as preceding foreordination (Rom. 8:29; 1 Pet. 1:2), while the other one reverses this order (Acts 2:23). This shows that these divine activities coincide; they should not be thought of as occurring in sequence.

"To suggest that 'foreknowledge' refers merely to God's advance knowledge of human actions is refuted by His choice of Israel. If God foreknew the people of Israel because of His advanced knowledge of a favorable response, He was wrong! Israel rebelled against God and rejected their Messiah. God 'foreknew' the people of Israel (Rom. 11:2) in the sense that He sovereignly chose them to be His own in spite of the unbelief that He knew would characterize that nation (10:21)."<sup>4</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>See *The Nelson ...*, p. 1894, for a concise summary of the Arminian and Calvinist interpretations of foreknowledge.

<sup>2</sup>Mounce, pp. 188-89.

<sup>3</sup>Chafer, *Systematic Theology*, 3:173.

<sup>4</sup>J. Carl Laney, *God*, p. 133. See also *The Theological Wordbook*, s.v. "Foreknowledge," by John F. Walvoord, pp. 128-30.

"Predestined" (or foreordained) means that God determined the destiny of the elect previously, specifically, before Creation (Eph. 1:3-4). That destiny is conformity to Jesus Christ's image, which is much more than just deliverance from sin and death. God accomplished this goal partially through believers' justification. He is presently accomplishing it partially through our progressive sanctification, and He will accomplish it completely through our glorification.

"This blessed hope—that believers will be conformed to the image of His own Son—explains God's dealings with them as His chosen sons in this present age. He is ever at work to reproduce the moral image of Christ in them. All that now comes into their lives He uses for their good to further that glorious goal. His aim for them now is not to make them happy, materially prosperous, or famous, but to make them Christlike. He now uses 'all things,' the sad as well as the glad, the painful as well as the pleasant, the things that perplex and disappoint as well as the things they eagerly strive and pray for, to further His eternal purpose for them. In His infinite wisdom He knows what is needed to bring about that transformation. For some of His own He may need to use hotter fire and strike with harder blows than in His dealings with others to effect the formation of Christ's image in them. This may be because some believers may be more resistant to His moulding [*sic*] activities or are more prone to insist on their own efforts."<sup>1</sup>

The Son became as we are (v. 3) so that we could become as He is. In this respect we are brothers and sisters of Jesus Christ. "Firstborn" refers to Jesus Christ's relation to resurrection (cf. Col. 1:15), the event that inaugurated His

---

<sup>1</sup>D. Edmond Hiebert, "Romans 8:28-29 and the Assurance of the Believer," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 148:590 (April-June 1991):182.

entrance into the glorified state that we will share with Him eventually.

"This distinctive designation of Jesus Christ expresses His position of priority to and preeminence over all the other members of the family."<sup>1</sup>

"As the final cause of all things is the glory of God, so the final cause of the Incarnation and of the effect of the Incarnation upon man is that the Son may be surrounded by a multitude of the redeemed."<sup>2</sup>

8:30 Paul summarized the steps involved in our realization of God's purpose: calling, justification, and glorification. Though glorification is yet future, the apostle spoke of it here as past. He could do so, not because it has already happened, but because it is so certain to take place that it is as good as having happened already. Bruce suggested that perhaps Paul was imitating the Hebrew prophetic past tense, in which a future event is spoken of as past because of the certainty of its coming (cf. Isa. 53; Jude 14).<sup>3</sup>

Another view is that the process of glorification has already begun in the believer.<sup>4</sup> Paul left sanctification out of this list because it is the one stage of our salvation in which human cooperation is essential. Paul listed only those things that God does by Himself in order to stress His sovereign working to bring the believer to His goal.<sup>5</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Ibid., p. 183. See also Calvin, 2:13:2.

<sup>2</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 218.

<sup>3</sup>Bruce, p. 168.

<sup>4</sup>See Dane Ortlund, "Inaugurated Glorification: Revisiting Romans 8:30," *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 57:1 (2014):111-33.

<sup>5</sup>On the apparent conflict between God's sovereignty and human freedom, see Lewis, pp. 52-53.

"The argument, when condensed, comes to this: that the very ones He foreknew, these, without the loss of one, He glorified."<sup>1</sup>

"Bridging the gap between predestination and justification by faith, God's effectual call brings the elect to salvation. This effectual call consists of a divine summons to salvation along with illumination, through which the elect rightly perceive the gospel and inevitably trust in Jesus Christ."<sup>2</sup>

"God's intention, Paul emphasizes, is to bring to glory every person who has been justified by faith in Jesus Christ. Our assurance of ultimate victory rests on this promise of God to us."<sup>3</sup>

### **5. Our eternal security 8:31-39**

In this climactic section that deals with the impartation of God's righteousness (chs. 6—8) the apostle developed the fact that God will not lose one person whom He has foreknown, and he rejoiced in this great truth. He asked and answered seven questions to drive home this truth.

"Nowhere in the annals of sacred literature do we find anything to match the power and beauty of this remarkable paean [song] of praise."<sup>4</sup>

"This whole passage ... strikes all thoughtful interpreters and readers, as transcending almost every thing in language ..."<sup>5</sup>

"... God's, or Christ's, love is the motif of this paragraph, mentioned three times (vv. 35, 37, 39; cf. Rom. 5:5-8)."<sup>6</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Stifler, p. 149.

<sup>2</sup>Robert A. Pyne, "The Role of the Holy Spirit in Conversion," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 150:598 (April-June 1993):218.

<sup>3</sup>Moo, p. 536.

<sup>4</sup>Mounce, p. 173.

<sup>5</sup>Jamieson, et al., p. 1163.

<sup>6</sup>Moo, p. 539.

Godet titled this section: "Hymn of the Assurance of Salvation."<sup>1</sup>

8:31 The key to the believer's security is: "God is for us." What He has done for us through His Son in the past and what He is doing for us through the Spirit in the present should give us confidence as we look forward to the future. He will certainly complete His work of salvation by glorifying us one day (cf. Phil. 1:6). Since God is [standing] for us "who is [can stand] against us?" No one!

8:32 God's plan for us cost Him dearly: He "did not spare His own Son" (cf. Gen. 22:16).

"The same God who three times is said by Paul in Romans 1 to have given up men and women (cf. 1:24, 26, 28) is now said by Paul to have given up his only son for us (cf. 8:32)."<sup>2</sup>

Having made the greatest possible sacrifice for us already, we can rest assured that God will also do whatever else may be necessary ("give us all things") in order to conform us to the image of His Son (cf. 2 Pet. 1:3).

"If you buy a costly watch at the jeweller's [*sic*], he sends it to you in a lovely case which he gives you freely—with your purchase. ... For 'all things' of this created universe,—yea, even all gifts or blessings God may give us, here or hereafter, are but nothing, compared with *Christ!*"<sup>3</sup>

"Romans 5:8-10 and 8:32 appear to me to be unanswerable texts for those who deny the scriptural teaching of Christ's substitutionary atonement. These passages state plainly that, if Jesus gave Himself for us in atonement, everything else must follow because, having done the most that He could do in dying as our

---

<sup>1</sup>Godet, p. 329. See also Robert G. Gromacki, *Salvation is Forever*; R. T. Kendall, *Once Saved Always Saved*; Michael Eaton, *No Condemnation*; Robert N. Wilkin, *Secure and Sure*.

<sup>2</sup>Johnson, *Discovering Romans*, p. 142.

<sup>3</sup>Newell, p. 337.

substitute, the lesser things—such as conviction of sin, repentance, effectual grace, faith—must inevitably follow. God's great eternal purpose, expressed so beautifully in 8:28-30, must reach its fruition in glorification for all those for whom He died."<sup>1</sup>

8:33 The question that opens this verse ("Who will bring a charge against God's elect?"), along with the two others that follow in verses 34 and 35, expands on the implications of "If God is for us, who is against us?" (v. 31).

Satan is the accuser of the brethren (Rev. 12:10; cf. Job 1—2). He charges God's chosen ones with sin. However, when he does this, he gets nowhere with God, because all sin is against God ultimately (Ps. 51:4), and He has already acquitted the elect. Therefore God, not Satan, is the only one in the position to charge the believer with guilt. But He will not do so because He is for us. The Father already provided His Son to pay the penalty for our sins, Christ already paid the penalty, and God has already declared us righteous.

"... 'to justify' means nothing else than to acquit of guilt him who was accused, as if his innocence were confirmed."<sup>2</sup>

Some see in this verse proof that Christ died only for the elect.<sup>3</sup> But the contrast in this verse is between God bringing a charge against the elect and His justifying the elect, not between the elect and the non-elect.

8:34 Christ Jesus is God's appointed Judge who will condemn the unrighteous (Acts 17:31), but He will not condemn the elect. Paul cited four reasons: First, Christ died for us and thereby removed our guilt. Second, He arose from the dead and is therefore able to give life to those who trust in Him (cf. John 11:25; 14:19). Third, He has ascended to the position of

---

<sup>1</sup>S. Lewis Johnson Jr., "Behold the Lamb: The Gospel and Substitutionary Atonement," in *The Coming Evangelical Crisis*, p. 134.

<sup>2</sup>Calvin, 3:11:3.

<sup>3</sup>E.g., Johnson, *Discovering Romans*, p. 144.



supreme authority in heaven at the right hand of God, where He represents us (v. 29). Fourth, He presently intercedes for us to the Father for our welfare (Heb. 4:14-16; 7:25; cf. Rom. 8:26).

8:35 "The love of Christ" could mean (1) our love for Christ, (2) His love for us, or (3) our sense of His love for us. View 2 is probably what Paul meant.<sup>1</sup> Present trials and sufferings are no indication that God has withdrawn His love from us.

"The world likes to point to our afflictions as proof of the fact that Christ has ceased to love us, or that his love is imaginary."<sup>2</sup>

Even though the Father allowed His Son to suffer, He did not stop loving Him. The Father deals with His adopted sons as He dealt with His unique Son (cf. John 16:33). Paul listed seven things, in increasing intensity, that a believer might experience that some might think could come between a believer and Christ's love.<sup>3</sup> Paul himself experienced them all (2 Cor. 11:23-28).

"Justification is not concerned with our spiritual condition, but with our spiritual relation; not with our actual state, but with our judicial position. ... Justification is the restoration of this true relation to God, and as such includes (a) the removal of condemnation by the gift of forgiveness [v. 33]; (b) the removal of guilt by the reckoning (or imputation) of righteousness [v. 34]; and (c) the removal of separation by the restoration to fellowship [v. 35]."<sup>4</sup>

8:36 Suffering has always been the portion of the righteous (Ps. 44:22). The sufferings in view are the consequence of our

---

<sup>1</sup>See Alford, 2:2:400-401.

<sup>2</sup>Lenski, p. 573.

<sup>3</sup>Witmer, p. 475.

<sup>4</sup>W. H. Griffith Thomas, *Grace and Power*, pp. 28-29. Paragraph divisions omitted.

identification with Christ (cf. Acts 5:41; 1 Pet. 2:21-25; 4:14-19).

- 8:37 Verses 37 through 39 express very eloquently the impregnability of our position as believers. "In all these things" is possibly the translation of a Hebraism meaning "in spite of all these things."<sup>1</sup> Another interpretation is that Paul meant "in the midst of all these things."<sup>2</sup> The Greek word *hypernikomen*, translated "conquer," suggests hyper-conquerors. Our victory is sure. The Cross is the great proof of God's love for us, and it is the basis for our victory. It proves that God is for us (v. 31).
- 8:38 God will continue to love us when we die, and He will continue to love us whatever may befall us before we die. He loves us on both sides of the grave ("neither death, nor life"). Neither helpful nor hostile angelic beings ("nor angels, nor principalities") can change God's commitment to love us. Nothing that the present or future may hold ("nor things present, nor things to come") can do so either. No force of any kind ("nor powers") can remove us from His loving care. Paul listed the extremities of human existence in this verse and the next.<sup>3</sup> These are the things that can separate us from the love of our other friends, but they will never separate us from the love of God.<sup>4</sup>
- 8:39 Space ("nor height, nor depth") cannot separate us from God's loving care either. Finally, nothing in all creation ("nor any other created thing") can drive a wedge between our loving God and His redeemed people. That has to include the behavior and beliefs of His own children as well (John 10:28-29). Not even the redeemed can remove themselves from God's love, which Christ Jesus has secured for them.<sup>5</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Bruce, p. 171.

<sup>2</sup>Cranfield, 1:440-41; Dunn, p. 506.

<sup>3</sup>Witmer, p. 475.

<sup>4</sup>Henry, p. 1775.

<sup>5</sup>See Gromacki, p. 72; Radmacher, *Salvation*, pp. 187-201.

"Since God alone is creator, *nothing* else is omitted in *krisis* ['creature']."<sup>1</sup>

God's love for His own implies His choice of His own for Himself, since He chooses to set His love on whom He will (cf. Song of Sol. 2:2; 4:1; Mal. 1:2; et al.).

If I hold a wooden pencil in my hands, I can break it easily. But if I insert the pencil inside a stout wooden dowel with a hole running through it, I will not be able to break it. Just so, Christians are safe because they are "in Christ."

Someone might contend that, even though God will never stop loving us, He may withdraw salvation from us if we do not keep loving and obeying Him (cf. Jude 21). However, such a statement reflects failure to appreciate the full significance of God's love for the believer. His love involves a commitment to finish the good work that He has begun in us (cf. Phil. 1:6). God has revealed all of Romans 6 through 8 in order to help us appreciate this fact.

Furthermore, the nature of our salvation argues against this view. Salvation is a gracious work of God for us. Our good works did not earn us salvation, and our bad works cannot take it from us. The fact that we have responsibilities in our progressive sanctification does not mean that we have to keep ourselves saved. Our sanctification is only a small part of our total salvation. Sinful behavior cannot separate a believer from his or her salvation any more than sinful conduct can separate a beloved child from his relationship to his loving father.

"This [verses 38 and 39] is the grandest sentence in Greek literature."<sup>2</sup>

"Nowhere has the feeling of St. Paul been displayed in such overflowing measure, and yet the thread of logical deduction is not broken for an instant. This passage [8:31-39] sums up,

---

<sup>1</sup>Dunn, p. 508.

<sup>2</sup>Charles B. Williams, *A Commentary on the Pauline Epistles*, p. 278.

as we have seen, all that Paul has hitherto expounded in this Epistle."<sup>1</sup>

"The results of justification are thus fully presented (chapters 5 to 8). No one has ever set them forth so compactly and so profoundly, in a way that is so stimulating, effective, and uplifting."<sup>2</sup>

## V. THE VINDICATION OF GOD'S RIGHTEOUSNESS CHS. 9—11

"The first eight chapters of Romans emphasize *faith*. Chapters 9—11 emphasize *hope*. Chapters 12—16 emphasize *love*."<sup>3</sup>

A major problem concerning God's righteousness arises out of what Paul just claimed for God. It is this: If God is for His elect, and will never remove His love from them, why has He set aside His chosen people, the Jews? It certainly looks as though something separated them from His love. For example, He allowed them to experience the Holocaust. If God has turned away from Israel, are Christians really that secure? The problem focuses on God's righteous dealings with humankind, and, therefore, it was one that Paul needed to deal with in this epistle, which deals with the righteousness of God.

In chapters 9 through 11 the apostle defended the righteousness of God in His dealings with Israel. Having explained how God justifies sinners, Paul now found it necessary to justify God Himself in order to prove and declare Him righteous. The theological term that describes a vindication of God is "theodicy." The apostle to all people proceeded to show that God had not removed His love from the Jews. Nothing had separated them from His love. God's present dealings with Israel do not indicate that He has abandoned them but must be viewed in the light of His future plans for the nation. In the future, God will glorify Israel.<sup>4</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Godet, p. 335.

<sup>2</sup>Lenski, p. 578.

<sup>3</sup>McGee, 4:708.

<sup>4</sup>For a brief tracing of Paul's argument through these chapters, see Robert Thomas, *Evangelical Hermeneutics*, pp. 495-99.

"More than half the OT quotations in Romans come in chaps. 9—11, and about 40 percent of these are from Isaiah ..."<sup>1</sup>

In chapter 9 Paul dealt primarily with God's dealings with Israel in the past, in chapter 10 with the Jews' present situation, and in chapter 11 with His future plans for Israel.

"The chief subject of chapter 9 is the sovereignty of God. That of chapter 10 is the possibilities of faith. That of chapter 11 is God's grace and mercy."<sup>2</sup>

We note in these three chapters that God's dealings with Israel as a nation are similar to His dealings with individual Christians, whom Paul had been speaking about in recent chapters. God elected both Israel (Gen. 12:1-3; Exod. 19:5-6; et al.) and each Christian (John 6:37, 44-45, 64-65; 10:26; Acts 13:48; 16:14; et al.).<sup>3</sup> Unsaved Israel, viewed as a whole (as well as many unsaved individuals), tried to establish its own righteousness by obeying the Mosaic Law instead of by faith in God. A mass conversion of Israel will occur in the future (11:25-32). Paul pictured this great event as similar to the grand picture of the climax of individual salvation that he gave us in chapter 8. God will prove faithful to His promises to Israel as well as to His promises to individual Christians. The whole section dealing with Israel culminates in rapturous praise to God (11:33-36) like the section dealing with individual salvation did (8:31-39). While these parallels do exist and are clear in the text, Paul did not stress them.

Throughout this whole section (chs. 9—11) Paul was speaking of Israel as the ethnic Jews only, not all the people of God in general throughout history, as most covenant theologians interpret the name "Israel," especially in chapter 11. Covenant theologians believe that the church inherits the promises that God gave to Israel whereas dispensational theologians believe that Israel will inherit those promises.<sup>4</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>James D. G. Dunn, *Romans 9—16*, p. 520.

<sup>2</sup>Vine, p. 136.

<sup>3</sup>See Thomas R. Schreiner, "Does Romans 9 Teach Individual Election unto Salvation? Some Exegetical and Theological Reflections," *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 36:1 (March 1993):25-40.

<sup>4</sup>See Renald E. Showers, *There Really Is a Difference*, for a comparison of covenant and dispensational theology.

## A. ISRAEL'S PAST ELECTION CH. 9

Paul began by tracing God's dealings with the nation of Israel in the past. He first reminded his readers that God had blessed Israel (vv. 1-5). Then he pointed out that God's choice to bless Israel in a special way did not arise out of Israel's heritage (vv. 6-10) or out of Israel's actions or behavior (vv. 11-13). His choice to bless Israel arose out of His own love and sovereign choice to bless the Jews more than other people. Israel's disobedience did not lead Him to cast her off permanently. God had been merciful to Israel. Israel's rejection of Christ led God to show mercy to Gentiles by treating them on an equal basis with Jews (in the church).

"No conjunction or particle connects the two chapters, and the tone shifts dramatically from celebration (8:31-39) to lamentation (9:1-3)."<sup>1</sup>

### 1. God's blessing on Israel 9:1-5

9:1 The apostle opened his discussion of God's relations with Israel very personally: by sharing his heart for his own people. Some might have thought that Paul hated the Jews, since he had departed from Judaism and now preached a Law-free gospel to both Jews and Gentiles. Therefore he took pains to affirm his love for his fellow Jews—with a triple oath.

"No man will ever even begin to try to save men unless he first loves them."<sup>2</sup>

Paul claimed two witnesses that testified that he was telling the truth when he professed love for the Jews. These witnesses were (1) his own position "in Christ" who is The Truth, and (2) his clear "conscience" that "the Holy Spirit" had sensitized.

"... Paul takes his stand as one for whom everything focuses in Christ—his gospel, his relation to his people, his day-by-day responsibility as believer and apostle—the

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 555.

<sup>2</sup>Barclay, p. 130.

implication being that any kind of deliberate falsification is not possible for one so conscious of his dependence on Christ. The effect for the Christian listeners would be to underscore the reliability of the oath."<sup>1</sup>

The human conscience is not the same as the voice of God.

"To many people conscience is almost all that they have by way of knowledge of God. This still small voice which makes them feel guilty and unhappy before, during, or after wrong-doing, is God speaking to them. ... Yet to make conscience into God is a highly dangerous thing to do. ... Conscience can be so easily perverted or morbidly developed in the sensitive person, and so easily ignored and silenced by the insensitive, that it makes a very unsatisfactory god."<sup>2</sup>

9:2 Paul's "great sorrow and unceasing grief" over Israel's condition contrast with his joy and exultation over his own condition (8:38-39).

"The words are the more touching when we remember that Israel not only did not like Paul; they hated him (cf. Acts 22:22; 25:24)."<sup>3</sup>

9:3 "I could wish" introduces a wish that God would not possibly grant (8:35). Nevertheless it was Paul's sincere desire. He had given up many things for the salvation of others (Phil. 3:8). Moses voiced a similar self-sacrificing wish for the Israelites' salvation (Exod. 32:30-35). Paul's brethren here were not his spiritual but his racial brothers and sisters ("my kinsmen according to the flesh"). Even though he was the apostle to all people he still took pleasure in being a Jew.

9:4 Paul shared much in common with his blood brothers and sisters. The name "Israelites" denotes the chosen people of

---

<sup>1</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9—16*, p. 531.

<sup>2</sup>J. B. Phillips, *Your God Is Too Small*, p. 9. Paragraph divisions omitted.

<sup>3</sup>Johnson, *Discovering Romans*, p. 149.

God, whereas the name "Jews" simply distinguishes them from Gentiles.<sup>1</sup> Here the apostle pointed out further advantages of the Jews (cf. 3:2). He named eight of their special blessings in verses 4 and 5.

First, God graciously had adopted Israel (cf. 8:15; Exod. 4:22; Deut. 14:1-2). Second, the Israelites had "the glory" of God's visible presence among them, notably in the pillar of cloud and fire but at other times as well (Exod. 40:34; 1 Kings 8:11). Third, God took the initiative in reaching out to Israel with "covenants" that bound Him and the nation together (i.e., the Abrahamic, Land or Palestinian, Davidic, and New Covenants). All of these covenants belonged exclusively to Israel, though Gentiles benefited from them. Fourth, the "giving [not receiving, NIV] of the [Mosaic] Law" was a great privilege for Israel. Fifth, the Jewish "temple service" enabled Israel to have fellowship with God. Sixth, "the promises" revealed to the patriarchs guaranteed God's action for them.

"He also gave them His Law to govern their political, social, and religious life, and to guarantee His blessing if they obeyed."<sup>2</sup>

"... in the last four words [covenants, Law, service, and promises] Paul has summed up the four most distinctive features of first-century Judaism, as perceived and noted both by Jews themselves and by non-Jews ..."<sup>3</sup>

"The meaning and extent of these promises are the linchpin in Paul's interpretation of salvation history; see 9:6b-13; 11:15; and especially 11:28, which forms with this verse an 'inclusio' surrounding Paul's discussion in these chapters."<sup>4</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>See Cranfield, 2:460-61, for a summary of the way "Israel" was used in the Hebrew Scriptures and in Judaism.

<sup>2</sup>Wiersbe, 1:543.

<sup>3</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9—16*, p. 528.

<sup>4</sup>Moo, pp. 564-65.



9:5 Seventh, the patriarchs were "the fathers" to whom God gave the promises even before Israel was a nation. Eighth, the Messiah ("the Christ") came from Israel. Here Paul called Jesus "God" (cf. Phil. 2:6, 10-11; Titus 2:13; 2 Pet. 1:2).<sup>1</sup>

"It is a very full proof of the Godhead of Christ; he is not only over all, as Mediator, but he is God blessed for ever."<sup>2</sup>

Paul did not explicitly compare Israel's blessings and those of Christians. His point was simply that God had blessed Israel greatly. Obviously, even though God had blessed the Israelites greatly, their blessings did not exceed those of Christians today. The writer of the Book of Hebrews argued that God's blessings of Christians under the New Covenant surpass His blessings of Israelites under the Old (Mosaic) Covenant.

## 2. God's election of Israel 9:6-13

Paul's train of thought unfolds as follows in these verses: Because God's election of Israel did not depend on natural descent from the patriarchs, to whom He had made promises (vv. 6-10), or human merit (vv. 11-14), Israel's disobedience cannot nullify God's determined purpose for the nation.

9:6 "The word of God" that was in Paul's mind when he wrote this verse was evidently God's revelation of His plans for Israel in the Old Testament. There God revealed that He had chosen Israel to be a kingdom of priests (Exod. 19:5-6). The Israelites were to function as priests in the world by bringing the nations to God (cf. Isa. 42:6). They were to do this by demonstrating through their life in the Holy Land how glorious it can be to live under the government of God.

Israel had failed to carry out God's purpose for her and consequently had suffered His discipline. It looked as though the word that God had spoken concerning Israel's purpose had "failed." The Greek word translated "failed" (*ekpeptoken*) means "gone off its course," like a ship. Paul proceeded to

---

<sup>1</sup>See Bruce, p. 176; and Robertson, 4:381.

<sup>2</sup>Henry, p. 1776.

show that God would accomplish His purpose for Israel in the rest of chapters 9 through 11. The first part of verse 6 has been called "the text or thesis to be expounded."<sup>1</sup>

"... Romans 9—11 contains 11 occurrences of the term 'Israel,' and in every case it refers to ethnic, or national, Israel. Never does the term include Gentiles within its meaning. The NT use of the term is identical with the Pauline sense in this section."<sup>2</sup>

Even though all the physical descendants of Israel (Jacob) constitute the nation of Israel, as Scripture speaks of "Israel," God spoke of Israel in a more restricted sense as well, namely, saved Israelites (cf. John 8:39, 44; Gal. 6:16). Paul had previously pointed out this distinction between the outward Jew and the inward Jew, namely, the Jew who is a Jew only because of his or her ethnicity, and the Jew who believes in Jesus (2:28-29).

Non-dispensationalists, who believe that the church replaces Israel in God's program (i.e., "replacement theology"), frequently appeal to this verse for support. They take the first "Israel" here as the "old Israel," and the second "Israel" as the "new Israel," the church.<sup>3</sup> Saved Gentiles are also Abraham's seed, but they are not in view here. Paul was considering only two kinds of Israelites: natural (ethnic) Israelites, both saved and unsaved, and spiritual Israelites, saved natural Israelites.<sup>4</sup>

"... St. Paul does not mean here to distinguish a spiritual Israel (i.e. the Christian Church) from the fleshly Israel, but to state that the promises made to Israel might be fulfilled even if some of his descendants were shut out from them. What he states is that not all the physical descendants of

---

<sup>1</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9—16*, p. 518.

<sup>2</sup>S. Lewis Johnson Jr., "Evidence from Romans 9—11," in *A Case for Premillennialism: A New Consensus*, p. 203.

<sup>3</sup>For further refutation of this interpretation, see Saucy, *The Case ...*, pp. 195-98.

<sup>4</sup>See Fruchtenbaum, *The Book ...*, pp. 181-82.

Jacob are necessarily inheritors of the Divine promises implied in the sacred name Israel."<sup>1</sup>

Normal interpretation of references to Israel throughout Scripture identifies "Israel" as the physical descendants of the patriarch Israel (i.e., Jacob). While Scripture sometimes ascribes more than one referent to words, it always gives clues as to which meaning is in view. For example, the word "flesh" has three referents in Scripture: the physical material that covers our bodies (our skin), all that Christians were in Adam (before we became Christians), and sinful human nature. Clues to the referent are usually in the context of the passage in which the word appears, either the near context or a larger context. Dispensationalists believe that Scripture gives no warrant for interpreting "Israel" as anything other than Jews, saved or unsaved.<sup>2</sup>

9:7 Even though God promised to bless "Abraham's descendants," it was only one main branch of his family ("through Isaac") that He singled out for special blessing. God's special elective purpose applied only to Isaac and his line of "descendants." This reference to God's choice of Isaac over Ishmael is the first of three Old Testament illustrations of God's sovereignty. The other two are Jacob/Esau (vv. 10-13) and Pharaoh (vv. 14-18).

"In chapters 9, 10, and 11 of Romans, Paul illustrates the use of the Old Testament by a New Testament writer. In his letters he cites the Old Testament 93 times (1/3 of the total Old Testament citations, with introductory formulas, in the New); yet twenty-six of his quotes occur in these three chapters of Romans."<sup>3</sup>

9:8 It was not all the natural children of Abraham ("children of the flesh") that God had in mind when He spoke of uniquely blessing Abraham's seed. It was only regarding the children

---

<sup>1</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 240. Cf. McGee, 4:711.

<sup>2</sup>See Darrell L. Bock and Mikel Del Rosario, "The Table Briefing: Does Israel Have a Future in God's Program?" *Bibliotheca Sacra* 172:685 (January-March 2015):100-107.

<sup>3</sup>Edwin A. Blum, "The Apostles' View of Scripture, in *Inerrancy*, p. 41.

born supernaturally—in fulfillment of God's "promise" to Abraham about seed—that He was speaking, namely, Isaac's descendants ("children of the promise").

"What counts is grace, not race."<sup>1</sup>

9:9 God did not choose to bless Isaac, after his birth, only because he was Abraham's son. Rather He promised Abraham, before Isaac's birth, that He would provide and bless a son for the patriarch supernaturally ("at this time"). His unusual birth confirmed God's choice of Isaac, as the channel of special blessing, to his parents.

9:10-12 God's special election of one portion of Abraham's descendants for special blessing is also evident in His choice of Jacob rather than Esau. Someone might suggest that Isaac was obviously the natural son through whom blessing would come, since he was the first son born to both Abraham and Sarah, and he was their legitimate son. But of Isaac and Rebekah's two sons, Jacob was not the first born. Furthermore, Esau and Jacob both had the same mother as well as the same father, so that was not a factor, as an objector might claim it was in Isaac's and Ishmael's case. Also, Jacob and Esau might have normally shared the firstborn privilege, since they were twins. One conception produced both of them.

However, God chose Jacob even though Rebekah bore Esau before Jacob. As in the case of Isaac, God made a choice between them before their birth. Their birth was also supernatural since their mother was barren. God chose Jacob before he had done any deeds ("anything good or bad") or demonstrated a character worthy of God's special blessing. The fact that Jacob became a less admirable person, in some respects, than Esau, shows that God's choice was not due to Jacob but to God Himself.

"Surely, if Paul had assumed that faith was the basis for God's election, he would have pointed

---

<sup>1</sup>N. T. Wright, *The Climax of the Covenant*, p. 238.

this out when he raised the question in v. 14 about the fairness of God's election. All he would have needed to say at that point was 'of course God is not unjust in choosing Jacob and rejecting Esau, for his choosing took into account the faith of one and the unbelief of the other.'"<sup>1</sup>

"the Divine purpose which has worked on the principle of selection.' These words are the key to chaps. ix—xi and suggest the solution of the problem before St. Paul."<sup>2</sup>

9:13 By quoting Malachi 1:2-3 Paul raised his discussion from the level of personal election to national election. Malachi was speaking of nations, as the context of this Malachi quotation shows. Paul's point was that God does not wait until He sees how individuals or nations develop, and what choices they make, before He elects them. God chose Jacob and the nation of Israel for reasons that lay within Himself, not because they merited election (cf. Deut. 7:6-8). This is a powerful refutation of the claim that election results from prior knowledge: that God chooses a person for salvation having foreseen that he or she will believe the gospel.<sup>3</sup>

"The connection of this quotation with v. 12 suggests that God's love is the same as his election: God chose Jacob to inherit the blessings promised first to Abraham. ... If God's love of Jacob consists in his choosing Jacob to be the 'seed' who would inherit the blessings promised to Abraham, then God's hatred of Esau is best understood to refer to God's decision not to bestow this privilege on Esau. It might best be translated 'reject.' 'Love' and 'hate' are not here,

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 583.

<sup>2</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 244.

<sup>3</sup>See Calvin, 3:21:5 and 6.

then, emotions that God feels but actions that he carries out."<sup>1</sup>

"... the point made here does not pertain to the question of loving more and loving less; rather, it literally means that God took Jacob to be His, but Esau He set aside. God made only one of these sons the recipient of Messianic promises and not the other. It is not a question of personal animosity or personal preference."<sup>2</sup>

"The strong contrast [love and hate] is a Semitic idiom that heightens the comparison by stating it in absolute terms."<sup>3</sup>

"... the Hebrew idiom means, 'I preferred Jacob to Esau' ..."<sup>4</sup>

This "love" equals "elect" equation is also clear in Genesis 29:30 and 31. In 29:30 we read that Jacob "loved Rachel more than Leah." In 29:31 we read that "Leah was [literally] hated."

"As to 'Jacob I loved, but Esau I hated,' a woman once said to Mr. Spurgeon, 'I cannot understand why God should say that He hated Esau.' 'That,' Spurgeon replied, 'is not my difficulty, madam. My trouble is to understand how God could love Jacob!'"<sup>5</sup>

In verses 6 through 13 Paul established that Israel was the object of God's choice for special blessing because of His own gracious will. He did not choose Israel because of the Israelites' natural descent from Abraham or because of any superior qualities in them.

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 587. Cf. Godet, p. 350; Cranfield, 2:480. See also Matt. 6:24; Luke 14:26; and John 12:25.

<sup>2</sup>Fruchtenbaum, *The Book ...*, pp. 184-85.

<sup>3</sup>Mounce, p. 199.

<sup>4</sup>Barrett, p. 182.

<sup>5</sup>Newell, p. 364.

### 3. God's freedom to elect 9:14-18

The question of fairness arises whenever someone makes a choice to favor one person or group over another. In this pericope Paul dealt with the justice of God in doing what He did.

"These verses are a detour from the main road of Paul's argument. Paul takes this detour because he knows that his insistence on God's initiative in determining who should be saved and who rejected (see vv. 10-13 especially) will meet with questions and even objections. Appropriately, therefore, Paul reverts to the diatribe style, with its question-and-answer format and references to a dialogue partner, that he has utilized earlier in the letter (see 2:1—3:8; 3:27-31; 6—7)."<sup>1</sup>

9:14 The apostle first flatly denied the charge that God is unjust: "There is no injustice with God, is there? Far from it!" God cannot be unjust because He is God.

9:15 Then Paul proceeded to refute the charge that God is unjust. When the whole nation of Israel rebelled against God by worshipping the golden calf (Exod. 32), God took the lives of only 3,000 of the rebels. He could have justly killed the whole nation. His "mercy" and "compassion" caused Him to do something that appeared to be unjust.

"The *grace* of God has been spoken of in this Epistle often before; but not until these chapters is *mercy* named; and until mercy is understood, grace cannot be fully appreciated."<sup>2</sup>

9:16 It is not a person's determination ("wants") or effort ("runs") that causes God to be merciful, but His own sovereign choice. God is under no obligation to show "mercy" to anyone. If we insist on receiving just treatment from God, what we will get is condemnation and death (3:23; 6:23).

9:17 God said that He raised "Pharaoh" up. God had mercifully spared Pharaoh up to the moment when He said these words

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, pp. 549-50.

<sup>2</sup>Newell, p. 355.

to him—through six plagues—and in spite of his consistent opposition to God. God did not mean that He had created Pharaoh and allowed him to sit on Egypt's throne, though He had done that too. This is clear from Exodus 9:16, which Paul quoted here.

Pharaoh deserved death for his opposition and insolence to God—without question. However, God said that He would not take his life in the remaining plagues so that his continuing opposition and God's victory over him would result in greater glory for God (cf. Josh. 9:9; Ps. 76:10). Here is another example, similar to the one in verse 15, of God not giving people what they deserve but extending mercy to them instead.

"Paul introduced this quotation with the words, For the Scripture says, for he equated the words of God with the words of Scripture."<sup>1</sup>

"*dunamis* ["power"] is usually taken as a reference to God's power as creator ... but Cranfield is probably right in seeing here a reference primarily to God's saving power (1:16; 1 Cor 1:18, 24; 2:5; 6:14; 2 Cor 4:7; 6:7; 13:4; etc.)."<sup>2</sup>

9:18 This statement summarizes Paul's point. In chapter 1 the apostle had spoken about the way that God gives people over to their own evil desires as a form of punishment for their sins. This is how God "hardens" people's hearts. In Pharaoh's case we see this working out clearly. God was not unjust because He allowed the hardening process to continue. His justice demanded punishment. Similarly, a person may choose to drink poison, or he may choose not to, but if he chooses to drink it, inevitable consequences will follow.

---

<sup>1</sup>Witmer, p. 477.

<sup>2</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9–16*, p. 554. Cf. Cranfield, 2:487.



"Neither here nor anywhere else is God said to harden anyone who had not first hardened himself."<sup>1</sup>

"God's hardening, then, is an action that renders a person insensitive to God and his word and that, if not reversed, culminates in eternal damnation."<sup>2</sup>

"God's hardening does not, then, *cause* spiritual insensitivity to the things of God; it maintains people in the state of sin that already characterizes them."<sup>3</sup>

"... men are not lost because they are hardened; they are hardened because they are lost; they are lost because they are sinners."<sup>4</sup>

"He [Paul] never says or implies that God has created man for the purpose of his damnation. What he does say is that in His government of the world God reserves to Himself perfect freedom of dealing with man on His own conditions and not on man's."<sup>5</sup>

"Those who are saved must thank God only, and those who perish must thank themselves only."<sup>6</sup>

"... we say boldly, that a believer's heart is not fully yielded to God until it accepts without question, and without demanding softening, this eighteenth verse."<sup>7</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Leon Morris, *The Epistle to the Romans*, p. 361.

<sup>2</sup>Moo, p. 597.

<sup>3</sup>*Ibid.*, p. 599. See also Dorian G. Coover Cox, "The Hardening of Pharaoh's Heart in Its Literary and Cultural Contexts," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 163:651 (July-September 2006):292-311.

<sup>4</sup>Newell, p. 371. See also Fruchtenbaum, *The Book ...*, p. 188.

<sup>5</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 258. See also Charles C. Ryrie, *Biblical Theology of the New Testament*, p. 173; J. Sidlow Baxter, *Explore the Book*, 6:86-90.

<sup>6</sup>Henry, p. 1777.

<sup>7</sup>Newell, p. 369.

Paul did not include the fact that Pharaoh hardened his own heart before God hardened his heart, which Moses plainly stated in Exodus.<sup>1</sup> Paul's point was simply that God can freely and justly extend mercy, or not extend mercy, to those who deserve His punishment.

"The reconciliation of God's sovereignty and man's responsibility is beyond our power. The Bible states and emphasizes both, and then leaves them. We shall be wise if we do the same."<sup>2</sup>

"The attempt to understand the relation between the human will and the Divine seems to lead of necessity to an antinomy which thought has not as yet succeeded in transcending."<sup>3</sup>

#### 4. God's mercy toward Israel 9:19-29

Next Paul dealt with a question that rises out of what he had just argued for, namely, God's freedom to extend mercy to whom He will. Is it not logical that if God is going to show mercy to whom He will, in spite of human actions and merit, that human actions really provide no basis for His judging us? Is not the basis of judgment really God's will rather than human actions?

9:19 Paul posed the question in this verse: "Why does He [God] still find fault [blame us]? For who has resisted His will?" Then he answered it in the verses that follow. However, he did not answer the question directly but "dealt with the attitude of the heart that produced the question."<sup>4</sup>

9:20 In the first place it is "foolish" and presumptuous for human beings, the objects of divine judgment, to sit in judgment on their Judge ("answers back to God"). Judging is God's prerogative, not ours. Creatures have no right to complain about their Creator's behavior.

9:21 The illustration in this verse clarifies the inappropriateness of the objector's critical attitude. Clearly Israel is in view as the

---

<sup>1</sup>See my comments on Exodus 4:19-23 in my notes on Exodus.

<sup>2</sup>Griffith Thomas, *St. Paul's Epistle ...*, p. 257. Cf. p. 266.

<sup>3</sup>Denney, 2:663. An antinomy is a contradiction between two beliefs or conclusions that are in themselves reasonable; a paradox.

<sup>4</sup>Fruchtenbaum, *The Book ...*, p. 187.

pottery vessel in the illustration (cf. Isa. 29:16; Jer. 18:6). Israel had no right to criticize God for shaping her for a particular purpose of His own choosing. Actually Israel had nothing to complain about, since God had formed her for an honorable purpose. The same is true of individuals.

"Neither Moses, nor Pharaoh, nor anyone else, could choose his parents, his genetic structure, or his time and place of birth. We have to believe that these matters are in the hands of God."<sup>1</sup>

"It is the recognition that Paul refuses to be drawn into a discussion of the fairness or unfairness of God's judgment, and that he is intent on using Israel's history to illuminate God's purpose in salvation-history, which provides the key to the difficult verses 22-23/24."<sup>2</sup>

"The question of [the objector in] v. 19 is wrongly framed, for God is not making complaints against men who have had no opportunity of being good [like earthenware pots], but commending his love to willful rebels in the death of his Son (v. 8)."<sup>3</sup>

9:22 Who "prepared" the "objects of [God's] wrath ... for destruction"? People prepare themselves for destruction by pursuing sin, Pharaoh being one example (ch. 1; cf. Matt. 7:13; 1 Thess. 2:15-16; 2 Thess. 2:3; Phil. 3:19). But God also prepares them for destruction, Pharaoh being an example of this as well (v. 17). The Greek verb translated "prepared" in this verse is either a passive (God prepared) or a middle (people prepare themselves). The forms of the passive and middle tenses are identical in Greek. The passive is much more common in the New Testament And the contrast with God's preparation of the object of His mercy in verse 23 suggests that Paul probably meant that God prepares some people for

---

<sup>1</sup>Wiersbe, 1:545.

<sup>2</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9—16*, p. 566.

<sup>3</sup>Barrett, p. 188.

destruction. This is another example of the sovereignty of God and the freedom of man working together.

Paul had in mind those in Israel who had opposed the gospel in his day and were therefore "prepared for destruction." God had shown "great patience" and had been merciful with them even though He had been "willing to demonstrate His wrath and to make His power known" (cf. 2:3-4; Acts 2:38; 3:19-20; 2 Pet. 3:9).

9:23-24 Those who believe the gospel "not only from among Jews, but also from among Gentiles" are those in whom God will display "the riches of His glory," not His wrath. The objects of God's mercy include both Jews and Gentiles (cf. 1:16; 2:10-11; 3:22).

"Paul teaches that God has brought upon certain people whom he chooses on the basis of nothing but his own will a condition of spiritual stupor, a condition that leads to eternal condemnation."<sup>1</sup>

"In verses 22 and 23 we have a strong indication of why God determined that evil should exist in his universe. The greatest good that people can have is the knowledge of God, and the revelation of God would be incomplete if we did not know him in his justice and in his mercy. But we can never know him in these attributes if sin does not exist in the universe. Thus, God has evidently determined that sin should exist in his world in order that the angels and humans can know him in his justice by his judgment of sin, and that people alone should know him in his mercy by virtue of the saving ministry of the Lamb of God."<sup>2</sup>

"Men fit themselves for hell; but it is God that fits men for heaven."<sup>3</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 609.

<sup>2</sup>Johnson, *Discovering Romans*, p. 160.

<sup>3</sup>Griffith Thomas, *St. Paul's Epistle ...*, p. 261. See also Henry, p. 1777.

9:25-26 How Hosea 2:23 and 1:10, which Paul quoted here, should be understood is debatable. In these verses Hosea was speaking of a future restoration of Israel following her discipline by God. Some interpreters say that this is a direct fulfillment of Old Testament prophecy.<sup>1</sup> But the inclusion of Gentiles (v. 24) is not in view in the Hosea verses. Other interpreters claim that this was an initial partial fulfillment that does not eliminate a future complete fulfillment.<sup>2</sup> The partial fulfillment is the present inclusion of Gentiles in the people of God, and the distant fulfillment will be Israel's restoration in the future. Another explanation is that Paul saw an analogy between God's present calling of Gentiles and His future calling of Israel.<sup>3</sup> The present inclusion of Gentiles in the people of God is similar to the future restoration of Israel in that in both instances people are reconciled to God. Others say that it is an application because of a similar situation, the similar situation being people being brought to God.<sup>4</sup> I think the last three interpretations are all possible explanations.

However one takes these Old Testament quotations, the point of them is clear: by God's mercy, believing Gentiles as well as believing Jews have been called to be "sons of the living God" (cf. v. 24).

9:27-28 Israel's election as a nation did not preclude God's judgment of the unbelievers in it. His mercy and faithfulness are observable in His sparing a remnant. Isaiah 10:22 and 23 anticipated the depletion of Israel through Sennacherib's invasion. That was God's instrument of judgment. When Paul wrote, the believing remnant of Israel was within the church, as it is today. The point of this quotation is that being a Jew

---

<sup>1</sup>E.g., McClain, p. 183; and John A. Battle Jr., "Paul's Use of the Old Testament in Romans 9:25-26," *Grace Theological Journal* 2 (1981):115-29.

<sup>2</sup>E.g., Darrell L. Bock, "The Reign of the Lord Christ," in *Dispensationalism, Israel and the Church: The Search for Definition*, pp. 37-67; W. Edward Glenny, "The Israel Imagery of 1 Peter 2," in *ibid.*, pp. 156-87; and *idem*, "The 'People of God' in Romans 9:25-26," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 152:605 (January-March 1995):42-59.

<sup>3</sup>Johnson, "Evidence from ...," p. 209-11; Witmer, p. 479.

<sup>4</sup>Fruchtenbaum, *The Book ...*, p. 189.

is not the same as being saved. Only a comparatively few Jews will be saved (i.e., those who believe on Jesus).

9:29 If God had not tempered His judgment with mercy He would have destroyed Israel as completely ("thoroughly and quickly," v. 28) as He had obliterated Sodom and Gomorrah. The remnant of believers ("descendants") among the mass of racial Jews is proof of God's mercy to the children of Israel.

"The reason that all attempts to annihilate the Jews have failed is because there has always been a believing remnant among the Jews."<sup>1</sup>

"The remnant is not the germ of a new people; Paul expects Israel as a whole to be restored [cf. 11:26]."<sup>2</sup>

"St. Paul in this section (vv. 19-29) expands and strengthens the previous argument. He had proved in vv. 14-18 the absolute character of the Divine sovereignty from the O.T.; he now proves the same from the fundamental relations of God to man implied in that fact which all his antagonists must admit—that God had created man."<sup>3</sup>

### **5. God's mercy toward the Gentiles 9:30-33**

This short pericope concludes Paul's argument concerning Israel's past election, and it begins the train of thought that he continued in chapter 10. The use of "righteousness" ten times in 9:30 through 10:21 illustrates the unity of this section and identifies a major theme in it.

"In Romans 9:1-29, Paul dealt with Israel's rejection of the Messiahship of Yeshua [Jesus] from the standpoint of divine sovereignty, showing that God's program had not failed. All that has happened is within His program of sovereignty and election. In this section [9:30—10:21], Paul will deal with the

---

<sup>1</sup>Ibid., p. 191.

<sup>2</sup>Denney, 2:666.

<sup>3</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 266.

same subject but from the standpoint of human responsibility, and he will show how and why Israel has failed."<sup>1</sup>

9:30-31 A question by Paul, which often marks a new argument in Romans, introduced his concluding summary that he couched in terminology suggestive of a foot race. Israel struggled hard to obtain the prize of righteousness, the righteousness that God requires for acceptance by Him. But Israel crossed the finish line behind the Gentiles, who were not running as hard. Israel as a whole hoped to gain righteousness by doing good works (law-keeping), but believing Gentiles obtained the prize by believing the gospel ("faith"). Again, the contrast between "law" and "faith" recurs.

"Hardly a passage in the New Testament is stronger than this one in its exposure of the futility of works as a means of justification."<sup>2</sup>

9:32-33 Israel as a whole, excluding the believing remnant, failed to gain a righteous standing before God because she tried to win it "by works." A stone on the racetrack over which she stumbled impeded her progress. Intent on winning in her own effort, Israel failed to recognize the "Stone" prophesied in Scripture, who was sent to provide salvation for her.

The quotation is from Isaiah 8:14 and 28:16 (cf. 1 Pet. 2:6-8). God intended the Messiah to be the provider of salvation. However, the Jews did not allow Him to fulfill this function for them. Consequently this "Stone" became a stone that they stumbled over (cf. 1 Cor. 1:23). Because the Jews rejected their Messiah, their progress toward God's goal for them was impeded. Individually they remained unsaved. Nationally the earthly messianic kingdom was postponed.

Israel's rejection of Jesus Christ did not make God unfaithful or unrighteous in His dealings with the nation. What it did do was make it possible for Gentiles to surpass the Jews as the main recipients of salvation.

---

<sup>1</sup>Fruchtenbaum, *The Book ...*, pp. 191-92.

<sup>2</sup>Harrison, p. 109.

## **B. ISRAEL'S PRESENT REJECTION CH. 10**

The chapter division signals a shift in Paul's emphasis from God's dealings with Israel in the past to His dealings with her in the present.

"The concluding verses of the ninth chapter and the whole of the tenth are devoted to proving the guilt of Israel."<sup>1</sup>

### **1. The reason God has set Israel aside 10:1-7**

The reason for Israel's failure mentioned in 9:32 and 33, namely, her rejection of Christ, led Paul to develop that subject further in this section.

10:1 This pericope opens with Paul returning to his feelings of compassionate concern for his fellow Israelites' salvation (9:1-3). Mention of their deliberate rejection of Christ (9:32-33) may have triggered this emotional expression.

"The reality of his love is seen in the fact that he prayed for them."<sup>2</sup>

"Spiritual desires should always be turned into prayer."<sup>3</sup>

"Every preacher should labour to be the means of saving his hearers."<sup>4</sup>

10:2 Ironically it was Israel's "zeal for God" that set her up for failure. Zeal also characterized Paul's life, which in many ways duplicated Israel's experience as a nation. It had kept him from believing on Christ too (cf. Acts 22:3; Gal. 1:14). Paul and Israel both had zeal for God, but it was zeal that lacked "knowledge," knowledge that Jesus was the Messiah (1 Tim. 1:13).

10:3 The Jews were ignorant of the righteousness that comes from God as a gift ("God's righteousness," 1:17). They sought to

---

<sup>1</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 278.

<sup>2</sup>Mounce, pp. 206-7.

<sup>3</sup>Vine, p. 153.

<sup>4</sup>C. H. Spurgeon, *An All Round Ministry*, p. 236.



earn righteousness ("establish their own") by keeping the Law. Instead, they should have humbly received the gift of righteousness that God gives to those who believe on His Son (cf. Phil. 3:9).

"The Law was designed not to bring about self-righteousness or self-hope, but contrariwise, self-despair."<sup>1</sup>

"In true faith, there is need of a great deal of submission."<sup>2</sup>

One advocate of "covenant nomism" interpreted Paul as saying that the Jews claimed to have "a special relationship with God secure for all who remain loyal to the covenant."<sup>3</sup> This is another way of saying that the Jews trusted in their own efforts for their salvation.

10:4 The Greek word *telos*, and its English equivalent "end," can refer either to termination (as in "the end of the matter") or to purpose (as in "to the end that"). Paul taught that Jesus Christ was the "end" (goal or "culmination" NIV) of the Mosaic Law in both respects: Jesus Christ both fulfilled the demands of the Mosaic Law, and He terminated it. Paul spoke of "the Law" as having a function to fulfill in history after which Jesus Christ terminated it (7:6; Gal. 3:19, 23; cf. Mark 7:18-19; Luke 16:16; John 1:17; Acts 10:10-15; Rom. 14:17; 1 Cor. 8:8; 2 Cor. 3:6-18; Gal. 4:9-11; 5:1; Eph. 2:15; Col. 2:14, 17; Heb. 7:12; 9:10). Furthermore he described the purpose of the Law as bringing people to Christ (7:7-13; Gal. 3:24; cf. Matt. 5:17). The Mosaic Covenant is evidently in view, rather than the whole Torah (Genesis through Deuteronomy).<sup>4</sup>

"In the progress of salvation history the beginning of the end of the role of law is in the coming of

---

<sup>1</sup>Newell, p. 389.

<sup>2</sup>Henry, p. 1778.

<sup>3</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9—16*, p. 588.

<sup>4</sup>*Ibid.*, p. 591, believed that the Torah was what Paul meant.

Christ. Its end is based on the work he effected and applied to the church he established."<sup>1</sup>

In the verse before us Paul evidently meant that the Mosaic Law ended when Jesus Christ died. The support for this view is that Paul had just been contrasting, in 9:30 through 33, the Law with the righteousness that comes through faith in Christ. The Jews incorrectly imagined that the Law was a means of justification. But when Jesus Christ came He provided the real means of justification. Paul did not mean that the Law was at one time a means of justification that ended when Jesus Christ died. The Jews only thought of the Law as a means of obtaining righteousness. It is that supposed function of the Law, to justify, that ends for everyone who believes in Christ.

God gave the Mosaic Law for two purposes primarily: One purpose was to reveal the character and standards of a holy God. By understanding the Law people would recognize their inability to be good enough to earn acceptance by God for salvation and consequently look to God as the only hope of their salvation (7:13, Gal. 3:24). The second purpose was to regulate the moral, religious, and civil life of the children of Israel (Deut. 4:1). God never intended the Law to provide eternal salvation for the Israelites (3:20). He did not give it for a redemptive purpose. God has preserved the Mosaic Law in Scripture for Christians because of its revelatory value. He never intended Christians, believers who live this side of the Cross, to regulate their lives by its precepts.

"It is because Reformed theology has kept us Gentiles under the Law,—if not as a means of righteousness, then as 'a rule of life,' that all the trouble has arisen. *The Law is no more a rule of life than it is a means of righteousness.*"<sup>2</sup>

God has terminated the whole Mosaic Law. It is one unified code (cf. 7:6). God wants Christians to observe nine of the

---

<sup>1</sup>David K. Lowery, "Christ, the End of the Law in Romans 10:4," in *Dispensationalism, Israel and the Church*, p. 246.

<sup>2</sup>Newell, p. 393.

Ten Commandments because they are part of the Law of Christ. The law of Christ is the regulatory code that God has given the church, namely, the teachings of Christ and the apostles (1 Cor. 9:21; Gal. 6:2).<sup>1</sup>

10:5 Paul supported his contention that justification results from faith in Christ (v. 4) in verses 5 through 13. These verses contrast righteousness that comes through the Law and that which is based on faith.

Paul used "the Law" (Deut. 30:6, 11, 14) to prove that Moses showed that it was futile to trust in law-keeping for salvation. Moses revealed that the person who practiced the righteousness commanded in the Law would "live" (Lev. 18:5; cf. Gal. 3:12). Here living means experiencing justification (cf. 2:13). However, no one can keep the whole Law (3:19-20). So what is in theory possible, namely, earning life by keeping the Law, is in reality impossible.

10:6-7 Positively Moses taught that justification comes by "faith" (Deut. 30:11-14). In the context of Moses' statement, which Paul referred to here, there is a strong emphasis on an attitude of loving obedience rather than a legalistic approach to earning righteousness (cf. Deut. 30:6-10). Moses' point was that the Israelites should not think that pleasing God was something beyond their reach. A proper attitude of faith toward God is essentially what He requires.

"'To say in thy heart' is a Hebraism for 'to think secretly' and is used especially regarding some unworthy thought which one fears to utter aloud."<sup>2</sup>

In quoting this passage (Deut. 30:12) Paul made his own application of it in harmony with his argument. It was vain for

---

<sup>1</sup>See J. Dwight Pentecost, "The Purpose of the Law," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 128:511 (July-September 1971):227-33; Hal Harless, "The Cessation of the Mosaic Covenant," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 160:639 (July-September 2003):349-66; and Ping-Kuen Eric Li, "The Relationship of the Christian to the Law as Expressed in Romans 10:4" (Th.M. thesis, Dallas Theological Seminary, 1991).

<sup>2</sup>Lenski, p. 650.

the Israelites to think that they had to be good enough to ascend into heaven in order to bring the promised Messiah ("Christ") down to earth to save His people.

"'Bringing Christ down from heaven' means to precipitate the Incarnation. This has already taken place; the Messiah has appeared, and it is therefore impossible to hasten his coming (as some devout Jews thought to do) by perfect obedience to the law and penitence for its transgression."<sup>1</sup>

Likewise it was foolish for them to think that they had to be good enough to raise Messiah up from the dead, which the prophets had predicted would happen (e.g., Ps. 16:8-11). God had already accomplished those things for the ungodly in the incarnation and resurrection of Jesus Christ. All they had to do was accept what God had done for them in Christ.

## **2. The remedy for rejection 10:8-15**

- 10:8 Paul quoted Moses again (Deut. 30:14) in order to reaffirm the fact that the great lawgiver taught that salvation came by "faith." The "word of faith" means the message that righteousness comes by faith. Faith is easy compared to a lifetime of slavish obedience to the Law. Anyone can express it easily, with the "mouth," and accept it easily, with the "heart."
- 10:9 The terms "mouth" and "heart," which have been a source of confusion in the interpretation of this verse, come from Moses' words that Paul quoted in the preceding verse. The statement quoted accounts for the unusual order of "confess" and then "believe" in this verse. The normal chronological order is that one believes first and then acknowledges his or her belief (i.e., confesses; cf. v. 10; 2 Cor. 4:13-14).

---

<sup>1</sup>Barrett, p. 199.

"But the two formulations interpret each other, so that what is to be both believed and confessed is the more precisely defined."<sup>1</sup>

"Paul is saying that man needs to bring into agreement his confession and his life. The mouth and the heart should be in harmony, saying the same thing."<sup>2</sup>

"Confess" means to say the same thing about something as someone else does (Gr. *homologeō*; cf. 1 John 1:9). In this context it refers to saying the same thing about Jesus Christ as God and other believers in Him do. It is an acknowledgment of one's faith in Christ. Obedient Christians in the early church made this confession verbally and in water baptism, as we do today (cf. Matt. 28:19-20).

In the early church the phrase "Jesus is Lord" was one of the most common and simple expressions by which believers confessed their faith in Christ (cf. Acts. 2:36; 1 Cor. 8:6; 12:3; Phil. 2:11). It is a confession parallel to, and very similar to, Israel's basic confession of faith in Yahweh: "The LORD is our God" (Deut. 6:4, the *Shema*). In the Roman world faithful citizens were increasingly being expected to acknowledge that Caesar was "Lord," by which they meant "divine." So the original recipients of this epistle, especially, had to face the issue of who really is deity, Jesus or Caesar.

"We take it that, for Paul, the confession that Jesus is Lord meant the acknowledgment that Jesus shares the name and the nature, the holiness, the authority, power, majesty and eternity of the one and only true God."<sup>3</sup>

"Paul's statement in vv. 9, 10 is misunderstood when it is made to support the claim that one cannot be saved unless he makes Jesus the Lord of his life by a personal commitment. Such a

---

<sup>1</sup>Cranfield, 2:527.

<sup>2</sup>McGee, 4:718.

<sup>3</sup>Cranfield, 2:529. Cf. Bruce, p. 176; and Mickelsen, pp. 1214-15.

commitment is most important [cf. 6:13-19; 12:1]; however, in this passage, Paul is speaking of the objective lordship of Christ, which is the very cornerstone for faith, something without which no one could be saved."<sup>1</sup>

The fact that Jesus is "Lord" (God and Savior) became clear when He arose from the dead (cf. v. 7). Jesus' resurrection was the proof that He really was the divine Messiah, God's Holy One (cf. Ps. 16:10-11). Belief in the resurrection of Jesus Christ meant belief that Jesus is Lord. Paul was probably speaking of belief in His resurrection as an evidence of saving faith, not as a condition for salvation.

Jesus' resurrection was not part of His saving work. His death saved us (3:25). While the resurrection is part of the good news of salvation, the gospel message (1 Cor. 15:3-4), belief in the resurrection of Christ is not a condition for salvation. A person could experience regeneration if he or she only knew and believed that Jesus Christ died for their sins—without knowing of His resurrection.

What if a person heard the gospel, including the fact that Jesus arose from the dead, and did not believe that Jesus arose? If he disbelieved in Jesus' resurrection because he did not believe Jesus Christ is whom He claimed to be, that person would not experience regeneration. However, if he disbelieved in Jesus' resurrection because he did not believe in the possibility of bodily resurrection, he probably would experience regeneration. In the latter case, he would just need teaching on this subject.

10:10 This verse summarizes the ideas in the previous verse in general terms. Paul frequently summarized in Romans, and often these summaries refer to the results of the action in view, as here (cf. 4:25; 5:21; 6:23; 7:25).

---

<sup>1</sup>Harrison, p. 112. See also Ryrie, *So Great ...*, pp. 70-73; idem, *Balancing the Christian Life*, pp. 169-81; Roy B. Zuck, "Cheap Grace?" *Kindred Spirit* 13:2 (Summer 1989):4-7; and Constable, "The Gospel ...," p. 209.

Belief in Jesus Christ in one's "heart" results in acceptance by God (i.e., forgiveness, imputed righteousness, justification, and positional sanctification). Testimony to one's belief in Jesus Christ normally follows, and it normally is verbal ("with the mouth"). Paul was describing the normal consequence of belief. Witmer wrote that the confession is to God.<sup>1</sup> One's confession that Jesus is Lord would be to God initially (i.e., expressing trust in Christ to the Father), but most interpreters have believed that the confession in view goes beyond God and includes other people as well. This seems to be a reasonable conclusion, since the confession is to be made "with the mouth."

In what sense does this confession (profession) result in salvation? Paul obviously did not mean that confession of Jesus Christ secures acceptance with God, since he had just said that belief in the heart does that (v. 9; cf. ch. 4). Salvation is a broad term that includes many kinds of deliverance, as we have seen. What aspect of salvation does taking a public stand for Christ secure? It might save the person making the confession from the potential discipline of God that might come his way for remaining a secret believer.<sup>2</sup> It also might save him or her from the loss of reward, which those who are unwilling to identify themselves with Him will suffer, to some extent (cf. Matt. 10:32-33; 2 Tim. 2:12). Verse 11 suggests that some form of shame will be the portion of those who do not confess Christ publicly (cf. 1 John 2:28). Taking a public stand for Christ often results in the eternal salvation of other people who hear the confession of the believer's faith and then believe themselves.

10:11 Paul removed all doubt about the requirement for justification, which his statement in verses 9 and 10 might have created, with this quotation from Isaiah 28:16. Belief in God, specifically in His promise, is the only condition for justification (cf. 3:24-25). God's promise is also the basis of the believer's assurance that he or she possesses salvation (cf. 1 John 5:12-13).

---

<sup>1</sup>Witmer, p. 481. See also Fruchtenbaum, *The Book ...*, pp. 203-4.

<sup>2</sup>See Dillow, pp. 122-24.

10:12 The blessing of justification is available to "Jew and Greek" alike (cf. 3:22). Its source is "the same Lord." This reference confirms the fact that "Lord" in verse 9 refers to Jesus as God, rather than as personal master, as does the next verse. He is "Lord of all" (cf. 3:29-30). "All who call on Him" in faith will experience "abounding" riches.

10:13 "The LORD" of Joel 2:32 is the same God as the Lord Jesus Christ. Peter also appealed to Joel 2:32, in his Pentecost sermon, for the same reason that Paul did here (Acts 2:21). Both apostles wanted to show that the door of salvation is open to everyone. When the elect call on God they are responding to His call of them (8:28-30). The only prayer of an unbeliever that God has promised to answer is this prayer for salvation, though He sometimes graciously answers other prayers that they pray.

Possibly Paul had a more restricted concept of salvation in mind in this verse, as Dillow suggested:

"This verse (10:13) is a quotation from Joel 2:32 and refers to the physical deliverance from the future day of wrath upon the earth and the restoration of the Jews to Palestine and not deliverance from hell."<sup>1</sup>

10:14 "They" refers to the lost, particularly the elect. Paul presented the logical sequence in a lost person's coming to faith in Jesus Christ in reverse order here. Faith depends on knowledge of facts. Someone has to proclaim these facts for others to know about them. The word "preacher" unfortunately implies an ordained minister, but Paul meant "someone preaching" (NIV), namely, any Christian who is proclaiming the gospel.

10:15 Being "sent" suggests that those heralding the gospel operate under orders from a higher authority. This description also implies that that authority has given them their message. God has sent every Christian to proclaim the gospel to the lost (Matt. 28:19-20; John 20:21). Unfortunately many Christians

---

<sup>1</sup>Ibid., p. 124.



are waiting for some special calling from God to go. They do not realize that God has already sent them. Where we go, and to what segments of humanity we proclaim the gospel, are secondary issues. If we get active proclaiming the gospel, God will direct us where He wants to use us (Ps. 37:23).

As is clear from Paul's quotation of Isaiah 52:7, the message is one of "good news" that brings joy to those who accept it. "How beautiful are the feet" is a figurative way of describing and expressing gratitude for the obedience of the messengers who have brought good news. The context of Isaiah's words was the announcement of God's favor in restoring Jerusalem following the Babylonian Captivity.

### **3. The continuing unbelief of Israel 10:16-21**

Even though the door of salvation is open to Jews as well as to Gentiles (vv. 8-15), the majority within Israel still refuse to believe in Jesus Christ.

10:16 In spite of the good news of Israel's restoration (Isa. 52:7), and the promises of Messiah's coming and deliverance, most of the Jews did not believe: "Who has believed our report?" (cf. Isa. 53:1). The same was true in Paul's day and is in ours. Even though the good news of salvation by faith in Christ, and in spite of the evidence that Messiah has come, still most Jews do not believe.

10:17 This verse summarizes the thought of verses 14 through 16. "The word of Christ" could mean the word from Him, namely, the message that He has sent Christians to proclaim (v. 15).<sup>1</sup> It could also refer to the message about Christ (v. 9). Both meanings could have been in Paul's mind. In either case, the gospel is in view.

"What faith really is, in biblical language, is receiving the testimony of God. It is the inward

---

<sup>1</sup>Cranfield, 2:537.

conviction that what God says to us in the gospel is true. That—and that alone—is saving faith."<sup>1</sup>

10:18 The rhetorical question ("They have never heard, have they?") suggests the possibility that Israel's rejection of her Messiah may have been due to a failure to get the message to the Jews (v. 14). However Paul's quotation of Psalm 19:4 clarifies that the Jews had heard. Every human being hears the testimony of nature (ch. 1), and all Israel had heard the special revelation of God concerning His Son from their prophets. They could not plead ignorance as a nation.

"But perhaps it would be simpler to think that Paul engages in hyperbole, using the language of the Psalm to assert that very many people by the time Paul writes Romans have had opportunity to hear. It cannot be lack of opportunity, then, that explains why so few Jews have come to experience the salvation God offers in Christ."<sup>2</sup>

10:19 Might there be a second possible reason for Israel's rejection of the gospel? Even though the Jews heard the message, perhaps they did not understand it.

The quotation from Deuteronomy 32:21 is in a context of Moses' criticism of Israel for forsaking Yahweh. God said that He would give Israel a desire to return to Himself ("make you jealous") by blessing another people. This is what had happened since Jesus Christ had died. God had opened the door of the church to the Gentiles ("those who are not a nation"). This should have made Israel more desirous of returning to God, accepting His Messiah, and experiencing God's blessing. However this had not happened, as the record of the church's growth in Acts proves. As time went by fewer and fewer Jews responded to the gospel, whereas more and more Gentiles accepted it. This response by the Jews was not due to ignorance but to deliberate rejection.

---

<sup>1</sup>Hodges, *Absolutely Free!* p. 31. Cf. pp. 37-43.

<sup>2</sup>Moo, p. 667.

"The apostle understands the Deuteronomy passage to predict that, since Israel will worship 'no-gods,' the idols, God will provoke them to jealousy by a 'no-people,' that is, the Gentiles, who were not the chosen people, as Abraham's descendants were (cf. 11:11, 14)."<sup>1</sup>

10:20 Isaiah 65:1 and 2 supports Deuteronomy 32:21 with emphasis on the fact that the Gentiles came to God ("I was found by those who did not seek Me ...").

10:21 The Jews, on the other hand, refused to come to God, even when He reached out to draw them to Himself ("all day long"). The reason that God has temporarily set them aside is their stubborn ("obstinate") rebelliousness. Moses and the prophets warned Israel of this attitude repeatedly, but the Chosen People persisted in it even after God had provided their Messiah.

"It is a wonder of mercy in God that his goodness is not overcome by man's badness; and it is a wonder of wickedness in man that his badness is not overcome by God's goodness."<sup>2</sup>

Chapter 10 deals with Israel's present rejection of Jesus Christ that has resulted in God's temporary rejection of her. Both rejections will change in the future, as the next chapter explains.

### C. ISRAEL'S FUTURE SALVATION CH. 11

In chapter 9 Paul glorified God's past grace in sovereignly choosing Israel as a vessel that would honor Him in a special way in time and space. In chapter 10 he spoke of Israel's present refusal to respond to God's provision of Jesus Christ as the key to obtaining God's righteousness. In chapter 11 Paul revealed God's future plans for Israel that, when accomplished, will fully vindicate His righteousness in dealing with Israel as He has done.

---

<sup>1</sup>Johnson, *Discovering Romans*, p. 171.

<sup>2</sup>Henry, p. 1780.

This chapter proves that God has a future for ethnic Israel, the racial descendants of Jacob (Israel). That future is distinct from the future of the church, which true believers of both Jewish and Gentile races living now compose. Romans 11 not only vindicates God, but it vindicates dispensational theology. Covenant theology, on the other hand, argues that God will fulfill the promises concerning future blessing that He gave to Israel in the church.<sup>1</sup>

"This chapter from the historical point of view is logically necessary. The Old Testament clearly promises Israel headship or leadership in the world's worship ... Israel as a separate people is to be restored and to realize the promises made to them in the Old Testament."<sup>2</sup>

"The great historian Arnold Toynbee classified Israel as 'a fossil civilization' and did not know what to do with it. For some reason, the nation did not fit into his historical theories."<sup>3</sup>

### **1. Israel's rejection not total 11:1-10**

The first pericope in this chapter gives hope for the future by showing that even now some Jews believe in Christ. Therefore a future for Israel is possible, since not all Jews have disbelieved. But more than that, Paul went on to explain that a future for Israel is certain because of God's promises.

11:1        The opening question carries on the diatribe rhetorical style of 10:18 and 19. "God has not [totally] rejected" the Israelites, even though they have, on the whole, rejected Him. The proof of this is that Paul himself was a member of the believing remnant, being a Christian Jew. Many Jewish Christians today prefer to refer to themselves as Messianic Jews. Paul was "a descendant of Abraham." And he came from "the tribe of Benjamin." By referring to his tribal heritage Paul seems to have been establishing his Jewishness firmly (cf. Phil. 3:5). This verse alone proves that God has a future for Israel as a nation.

---

<sup>1</sup>See Saucy, *The Case ...*, pp. 250-63, for a good presentation of Israel's future restoration in this chapter; and Griffith Thomas, *St. Paul's Epistle ...*, pp. 310-17.

<sup>2</sup>Stifler, p. 183.

<sup>3</sup>Wiersbe, 1:550.

11:2a The fact that Paul and other believing Jews have had faith, though they have been relatively few compared to the total number of ethnic Jews, proves that God has not completely rejected the people whom He had elected (i.e., "foreknew," cf. 8:29).

"The very fact of God's choice excludes the possibility of his desertion of his own."<sup>1</sup>

11:2b-4 In Elijah's day, Israel's departure from God was widespread. Elijah wrongly concluded that he was the only Israelite who had remained faithful to the Lord. But God assured him that He had preserved 7,000 other Israelites who constituted a believing remnant within the unfaithful nation.

11:5 Not only in Elijah's day but also in both Paul's day and our day there are believing Jews who constitute a believing remnant among the physical descendants of Jacob. By referring to "God's gracious choice" Paul identified the real reason for the presence of a believing remnant. God has graciously chosen to save some Jews even though the majority of Jews have rejected Christ.

11:6 The apostle elaborated the final thought of verse 5 here. It is the "grace" of God, not the "works" of the remnant, that is the real cause of their saved condition. Believing Jews are not superior. They are just greatly blessed. Again Paul emphasized that salvation is by grace, not works. If it were by works, God's unmerited favor would not be unmerited but earned.

11:7 Verses 7 through 10 summarize the argument ("What then?" v. 7) with supporting Old Testament quotations (vv. 8-10).

"What Israel is seeking" refers back to "their own [righteousness]" (10:3). Though they sought it the majority of Israelites had "not obtained" it, because they sought to gain it by works. But the "chosen" remnant of Jews "obtained it," because they believed in Christ. The "rest" of the Jews, the majority, "were hardened" in unbelief.

---

<sup>1</sup>Harrison, p. 117.

The Greek word translated "hardened" (*eporothesan*) is not the same one that Paul used in 9:18 (*sklerune*). The one he used in 9:18 simply pictures a hardening. The one he used here describes a special hardening, with the result that the hardness renders the person more difficult to get through to from then on. It is as though a callus had built up over the Israelites that made them less sensitive to God.<sup>1</sup>

"... God's hardening permanently binds people in the sin that they have chosen for themselves."<sup>2</sup>

"This postponement in Israelite history is not so much an interruption of redemption as an *extension* of predicted hardening (Rom. 11:7-10). The Exile, which was a punishment for national disobedience, has therefore been prolonged during the present age until the appointed time for Israel's national (and spiritual) restoration (Acts 1:7; 3:21; Rom. 11:25-27)."<sup>3</sup>

- 11:8 The quotation in this verse is a combination of Deuteronomy 29:4 and Isaiah 29:10. Paul used these passages to prove the following point: The Israelites did not follow God faithfully even though they saw God's miraculous deliverance from Egypt, experienced His preservation in the wilderness, and heard the warnings of their prophets. God gave them "a spirit of stupor" because they failed to respond to the numerous blessings that He bestowed on them.<sup>4</sup> A similar example would be a person losing his appetite for steak because he eats steak every day. This was apparently an instance of God giving the Jews over to the natural consequences of their actions (1:24, 26, 28).
- 11:9-10 The Jews regarded Psalm 69, which Paul quoted here, as Messianic in Paul's day (cf. John 15:25). The quotation from this psalm (vv. 22-23) records David's desire. He wished that his enemies' "table" (a metaphor for what is associated with

---

<sup>1</sup>H. P. Liddon, *Explanatory Analysis of St. Paul's Epistle to the Romans*, pp. 199-200.

<sup>2</sup>Moo, p. 681.

<sup>3</sup>J. Randall Price, "Prophetic Postponement in Daniel 9 and Other Texts," in *Issues in Dispensationalism*, p. 136.

<sup>4</sup>Robertson, 4:393.

it, i.e., blessings) would become something that they would stumble over ("a stumbling block"). The enemies in view were the Lord's enemies, as well as the king's enemies, since David was the LORD's anointed. This is what actually happened to the Israelites who had set themselves against God by rejecting His Son. Inability to "see" clearly and bondage to the Law had resulted (cf. Acts 15:10).

The Greek phrase *dia pantos* usually means "continually." It probably means that here as well, rather than "forever."<sup>1</sup> Paul would explain that Israel's obstinacy and bondage would not last indefinitely (v. 26). He explained that God had brought upon the Jews what David had prayed would happen to his persecutors.

"Their table is their table-fellowship: the unity and interrelatedness created by the law and so highly valued in Judaism were no more than a delusion since they were a union in sin (iii. 20), not righteousness. The bent back is a symbol of bondage; compare Gal. iv. 25."<sup>2</sup>

Even though as a whole Israel had reaped the fruit of her own stubborn rebellion against God, He had chosen a remnant within the nation for salvation. The presence of this remnant shows that God has not cast off His chosen people totally, nor has He been unfaithful to His promises to them.

## 2. Israel's rejection not final 11:11-24

Now Paul put the remnant aside and dealt with Israel as a whole. Even while Israel resists God's plan centered in Messiah (Christ), the Lord is at work bringing Gentiles to salvation. Gentile salvation really depends on Israel's covenant relationship with God, which Paul illustrated with an olive tree. The salvation of Gentiles in the present age not only magnifies the grace of God, but it will also provoke Israel to jealousy and lead her ultimately to return to the Lord.

---

<sup>1</sup>Cranfield, 2:552.

<sup>2</sup>Barrett, p. 211.

11:11 Another rhetorical question marks another advance in the movement of Paul's thought. The stumbling of Israel did not result in a hopeless "fall" (cf. 9:32-33; 11:9). God now deals with Gentiles on the same basis as Jews, regarding their salvation, because Israel as a whole rejected Jesus Christ. One reason God chose to do this was to make the Jews "jealous" of the Gentiles as the recipients of God's blessings so that the Jews would turn back to God.

To illustrate, sometimes parents will reward one of their children for being obedient, but will withhold a reward from another one of their children who has been disobedient. The intent of that treatment is, in part, to motivate the disobedient child to become more obedient (cf. Matt. 22:1-14; Luke 14:15-24).

11:12 Paul here anticipated the national repentance of Israel, which he articulated later (v. 26). God had promised to bless the world through Israel (Gen. 12:1-3). "How much more" blessing will come to "the world" when unbelieving Jews turn back to God ("their fulfillment" or fullness) than is coming to the world now while they are in unbelief!

"While *pleroma* probably has a qualitative denotation—'fullness'—the context and the parallel with v. 25 suggest that this 'fullness' is attained through a numerical process. Paul would then be suggesting that the present 'defeat' of Israel, in which Israel is numerically reduced to a small remnant, will be reversed by the addition of far greater numbers of true believers: this will be Israel's destined 'fullness.'"<sup>1</sup>

"From one point of view the unbelief of the Jews was a transgression (*paraptoma*), from another it was a defeat, for they were repulsed from the

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 690.



Messianic kingdom, since they had failed to obtain what they sought."<sup>1</sup>

11:13-14 Here Paul applied what he had said earlier to his own ministry. By evangelizing Gentiles Paul was causing more Jews to become jealous of God's blessings on Gentile converts. He was thereby playing a part in bringing some Jews to faith.

"The Gentiles are not saved merely for their own sake, but for the sake of God's election of Israel."<sup>2</sup>

"However strange it may sound, the way to salvation of Israel is by the mission to the Gentiles."<sup>3</sup>

11:15 When unbelieving Jews return to God and He accepts them, the results for all humankind will be comparable to "life from the dead" (cf. Ezek. 37). God's blessings on humanity now ("reconciliation") will pale by comparison with what the world will experience then (i.e., during the Millennium).<sup>4</sup>

"The reconciling of the world does not mean that all men will be reconciled, but that all who will may be reconciled. The scope of reconciliation is the whole world and the instrument is the Gospel."<sup>5</sup>

11:16 "The first piece of dough" probably describes the believing remnant in Israel now: Christian Jews. "The lump" probably refers to the whole nation of Israel. God has consecrated both groups to Himself; they are "holy" (cf. Lev. 23:20). The saved remnant in Israel today is a representative portion of the entire nation, which also belongs to the Lord.

"The root" probably refers to "the promises given to the fathers" (i.e., the patriarchs of Judaism: Abraham, Isaac, and

---

<sup>1</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 322.

<sup>2</sup>James Daane, *The Freedom of God*, p. 145.

<sup>3</sup>Johannes Munck, *Paul and the Salvation of Mankind*, p. 301.

<sup>4</sup>See Jim R. Sibley, "Has the Church Put Israel on the Shelf? The Evidence from Romans 11:15," *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 58:3 (September 2015):571-81.

<sup>5</sup>Vine, p. 165.

Jacob; cf. 15:8), and "the branches" refer to those who benefit from the root, in view of how Paul proceeded to develop this illustration in verses 17 through 24. J. Dwight Pentecost believed that "the first piece of dough" and "the root" both refer to the Abrahamic Covenant, and "the lump" and "the branches" refer to the believing and unbelieving Gentiles and Jews,<sup>1</sup>

11:17 Paul proceeded to explain the analogy that he had in mind. "The branches" that "were broken off" evidently refer to the Jews that God has set aside in view of their widespread unbelief (9:27-29). The "wild olive [branches]" that God has "grafted in among them [the Jews]" evidently refer to believing Gentiles who "became partakers with them [the Jews] of the rich root of the olive tree."

The figure of a tree's "rich root" suggests the source of the life of the tree and the source of its fruitfulness. The fact that Paul chose an "olive tree" for his illustration suggests that he wanted to emphasize the fruitfulness of the tree, since the olive tree was the source of oil that was used for many purposes, and olives were a common source of nourishment.

"The important place the olive has had in Rome's economy from Bible times until now is indicated by Italy's being the leading olive-growing country in the world today [in 1989]. Thus it should not seem strange that the apostle, when writing to the church at Rome, would use the figure of the olive tree."<sup>2</sup>

Paul evidently meant that believing Gentiles have been joined (by God) with believing Jews (the branches that were not cut off), and have become partakers with the Jews of promised blessings that God made to the Jews. Some Jews were broken off of this "tree" by their unbelief. And some Gentiles have been grafted into this "tree" by believing the gospel.

---

<sup>1</sup>See J. Dwight Pentecost, *Thy Kingdom Come*, p. 286.

<sup>2</sup>Marvin R. Wilson, *Our Father Abraham*, p. 13.

What exactly is this "tree"? The "olive tree" was also a symbol of the nation of Israel in the Old Testament (Jer. 11:16-17; Hos. 14:4-6). So some interpreters believe that the "tree" is Israel. This has led some of them to say Paul meant that Gentiles become part of Israel. This hybrid entity, composed of believing Jews and believing Gentiles, which the New Testament calls "the church," has been called, by those who hold this view, "the new Israel." But Paul did not say that the Gentiles became part of Israel, only that they became partakers of the blessings of the root of the tree along with the Jews.

Many commentators have understood the "tree" to represent the blessings that God promised Abraham and repeated to the patriarchs.<sup>1</sup> These promises began with the Abrahamic Covenant, which some interpreters identify with the "rich root" of the tree.<sup>2</sup> Another view is that the "root" refers to Abraham.<sup>3</sup> We might add to the illustration by saying that the root derives its nourishment from God Himself. He was the source of the promises.

Paul said that God "grafted" "you" (Gentiles) "in among them" (the Jews.) The Gentiles became partakers with the Jews of the blessings that come through the "root" (the promises). That is, Gentiles have become partakers with the Jews of the promises that God gave in the Abrahamic Covenant and subsequently to the patriarchs.

Paul did not say that the Gentiles became part of Israel, only that they partake with the Jews of the blessings of the "rich root." This is a very important point of distinction. The olive tree is not the church, or the so-called "new Israel," in which God has united Jewish and Gentile believers in one body (Eph. 3:6). This is the view of many amillennialists and covenant theologians.<sup>4</sup> The branches from the "wild olive tree" (v. 24) retain their own identity as wild branches (Gentiles), even

---

<sup>1</sup>Alford, 2:2:430; Johnson, *Discovering Romans*, p. 180; Wilson, pp. 14-15; Moo, p. 698.

<sup>2</sup>Ryrie, *Biblical Theology ...*, p. 214; Fruchtenbaum, *The Book ...*, p. 223.

<sup>3</sup>Darby, 4:207; Gaebelein, 3:2:68.

<sup>4</sup>E.g., Henry, p. 1782, et al.

though they receive blessings that come through the Jews (e.g., the Messiah, the Scriptures, etc.). Some believe that the grafted in branches represent specifically all who profess to be Christians (i.e., Christendom), saved and unsaved alike.<sup>1</sup> I prefer the view that they are Gentiles.

Another common misunderstanding of this figure is that the olive tree is a symbol of all believers throughout history: all the people of God. If the tree represents all believers, this must mean that some believing Jews have ceased to be part of the people of God. This, of course, is not true.

Some interpreters have objected to Paul's illustration because he spoke of grafting wild branches into a good olive tree. Horticulturalists know that the opposite is normally done: good branches are grafted into a wild tree. However, Paul proceeded to say that what he was describing was "contrary to nature" (v. 24). He knew that his illustration was not typical horticultural practice, which he changed for his own purpose.<sup>2</sup>

"Men graft to mend the tree; but God grafts to mend the branch."<sup>3</sup>

11:18 Gentile believers should not feel superior to ("arrogant toward") Jewish unbelievers, the branches that God has broken off the tree (vv. 17, 19). Gentile believers might conclude that their salvation is what was responsible for the continuing existence of Israel (cf. v. 14). Really it is God's faithfulness in honoring His promises (the root) that is responsible for that.

11:19-20 It is true that one of the reasons that Gentiles have become partakers of the blessings that God promised the Israelites is that many of the Jews have not believed. Of course, it was always God's purpose to bless Gentiles (Gen. 12:1-3). However, the Gentile believer who may feel superior to the unbelieving Jew needs to remember that the only reason he is where he is (partaking of blessings that God promised the

---

<sup>1</sup>E.g., Gaebelin, 3:2:68.

<sup>2</sup>See Godet, p. 406.

<sup>3</sup>Henry, p. 1782.

Israelites), is because he has simply believed God ("you stand by your faith"). He is not there because he has done some meritorious work that would be a ground for boasting (cf. 5:2). Therefore Paul warned: "Do not be conceited, but fear."

- 11:21 It is very important to note that throughout this whole discussion Paul was viewing Gentile believers and Jewish unbelievers as two groups. This fact is clear from his use of the singular "you" in the Greek text (*su*, vv. 17-24). If he had been speaking of individual believers we might conclude that this verse provides some basis for believing that a believer could lose his or her salvation. Paul's point was: if God set aside Jews ("did not spare the natural branches") temporarily, because of their unbelief, He could do (not will do) the same with Gentiles, because of their boasting.
- 11:22 "Those who fell" are the unbelieving Jews, and "you" are the believing Gentiles. The positions are reversible. Gentiles can become the object of God's "severity," and Jews can become the object of His "kindness." This depends on their responses to God. Their response determines whether God will spare them (v. 21) or cut them off (v. 22)—as a group, not individually.
- 11:23 Belief is what resulted in God grafting in believing Gentiles (v. 17), and belief could result in Him grafting in believing Jews in the future ("God is able to graft them in again"). In the illustration the whole trunk of the cultivated olive tree represents the blessings that God promised the Jews and the natural branches are Jews. Again, Paul was not speaking of individual salvation here but of God's program for Jews and His program for Gentiles as groups.
- 11:24 The "wild olive tree" probably represents the Gentile world.<sup>1</sup> What follows is another of Paul's "much more" comparisons (5:9, 19, 15, 17; cf. Luke 11:13). If God did the difficult thing, namely, grafting wild branches (believing Gentiles) onto the trunk (God's blessings), it should not be hard to believe that He will do the easier thing. The easier thing is restoring the

---

<sup>1</sup>Bruce, p. 204.

pruned natural branches of the cultivated tree (unbelieving Jews who will come to faith in Christ) to their former position (as beneficiaries of God's blessings).

"The restoration of converted Jews to the Patriarchal communion must from the nature of the case be more natural than the conversion of the heathen."<sup>1</sup>

Obviously the branches formerly broken off do not represent the same individuals as those grafted in in the future. They are Jews who, in the former case, did not believe and, in the latter case, will believe. However, the grafting in of Jews in the future will not involve the breaking off (rejection) of Gentile believers.

### **3. Israel's restoration assured 11:25-32**

Paul previously laid the groundwork for this section. His point so far was that God is able to restore Israel. That is, He can restore the nation of Israel—which now has many natural branches (unbelieving Jews) broken off—to its former condition as a blessed and fruitful nation in the world. Now we learn that He is not only *able* to do this, but He *will* do it. This section is the climax of everything that Paul wrote in chapters 9 through 11.

"The same mercy that has overtaken the Gentiles who were formerly disobedient will finally overtake the now disobedient Israel."<sup>2</sup>

"Just as when treating of the Resurrection, his argument passes into revelation, 'Behold, I tell you a mystery' (I Cor. xv. 51): so here he declares not merely as the result of his argument, but as an authoritative revelation, the mystery of the Divine purpose."<sup>3</sup>

11:25      A "mystery" in the New Testament refers to a truth previously unknown but now revealed. It does not mean something

---

<sup>1</sup>Liddon, p. 314. Cf. Sanday and Headlam, p. 330.

<sup>2</sup>Harrison, p. 123.

<sup>3</sup>Sanday and Headlam, pp. 333-34.

incomprehensible or something eerie. In the mystery religions of the Greco-Roman world initiates received secret information that was unknown to non-initiates. A modern counterpart is the "secret societies" (e.g., the Masons, the Eastern Star, et al.). The previously unrevealed revelation in this case was that Israel (ethnic Jews) would experience a partial hardening of heart from God until the full number of elect Gentiles would be saved. God's plan to put the nation of Israel aside temporarily should not make Gentile believers think too highly of themselves. God designed this plan to display His own glory.

We must be careful not to equate the modern State of Israel with the Israel spoken of in the Bible. Biblical Israel was a sovereign nation among nations in the world that lost its sovereignty when Nebuchadnezzar destroyed Jerusalem in 586 B.C. Whereas some Jews have organized the modern State of Israel, God has promised that He will yet cause the great majority of Jewish people to believe on His Son and return to the Promised Land as believers in Him. This will happen when Jesus Christ returns to the earth. He will then reestablish Israel as the specially blessed people of God and reign over them (and the whole world) as their Davidic King (cf. Zech. 12—14). The present State of Israel is not enjoying the abundant blessings that God promised to bring on Israel when Christ returns.

The "fullness of the Gentiles" refers to the "full number of the Gentiles" (NIV; cf. v. 12; Luke 21:23-24; Acts 15:14). When all the Gentiles whom God has chosen for salvation during the present age of Jewish rejection (or setting aside, i.e., "the times of the Gentiles," Luke 21:24) have experienced salvation, God will initiate a revival of faith among the Jews. Even though some Jews trust in Christ now, God is not presently working through them as Israel, as He will in the future (i.e., in the Millennium), after multitudes of them turn to faith in Christ. He is now working through the church.

"Till the accomplishment of the conversion of the Gentiles, there will be among the Jews only

individual conversions; but this goal reached, their conversion *en masse* will take place."<sup>1</sup>

11:26

"The first clause of v. 26 is the storm center in the interpretation of Rom. 9—11 and of NT teaching about the Jews and their future."<sup>2</sup>

"It is impossible to entertain an exegesis which understands 'Israel' here in a different sense from 'Israel' in verse 25 ([that is, it is impossible to understand "Israel" in verse 26 as meaning] 'a hardening has come upon part of Israel')."<sup>3</sup>

Nevertheless, many interpreters have done this. For example, amillennialist Lenski wrote:

"In v. 25 'Israel' is a physical nation; hence it is claimed that in v. 26 'all Israel' must have the same meaning. But in 9:7 we read: 'all those of Israel (the physical nation), not these are Israel (the spiritual Israel).' In that same brief sentence 'Israel' is used in different senses."<sup>4</sup>

"All Israel" means Israel as a whole in contrast to the relatively small believing remnant of Jews. The context makes this clear. This conclusion does not require that every individual Israelite living at this time will be saved. It only requires the salvation of the bulk of the nation (cf. 1 Kings 12:1; 2 Chron. 12:1-5; Dan. 9:11; Zech. 12—13).<sup>5</sup> Similarly, "all Israel" has temporarily been set aside as a whole and does not believe the gospel (v. 25), though individuals within the nation do believe.

"To understand this great statement ["all Israel will be saved"], as some still do, merely of such a

---

<sup>1</sup>Godet, p. 411. See also pp. 528-30.

<sup>2</sup>Moo, p. 719. See H. Wayne House, "The Future of National Israel," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 166:664 (October-December 2009):643-81, for a discussion of the major views.

<sup>3</sup>Bruce, p. 209.

<sup>4</sup>Lenski, p. 726.

<sup>5</sup>Bruce, p. 209. Cf. Mickelsen, p. 1218; Dunn, *Romans 9—16*, p. 681; Johnson, *Discovering Romans*, p. 186.



gradual inbringing of *individual* Jews, that there shall at length remain none in unbelief, is to do manifest violence both to it and to the whole context. It can only mean the ultimate ingathering of Israel as a *nation*, in contrast with the present 'remnant.'"<sup>1</sup>

Whenever the name "Israel" appears in the New Testament, it refers either to the whole nation of Jacob's racial descendants (ethnic Jews) or to the believing remnant within that group. It is not another name for the church. John Calvin believed "Israel" meant "the church," and covenant theologians have followed in his train.<sup>2</sup> "All Israel" does not refer to all Jews who have been believers throughout history either.<sup>3</sup> If that were what Paul meant, this statement would be irrelevant to his argument.<sup>4</sup>

"So" here means "when that has happened" (NEB), or "then after this" (JB).<sup>5</sup> It may also mean "in this manner," namely, in the way that Paul described in verses 11 through 24.<sup>6</sup>

"Whatever is happening to Israel now, Paul has been given the divinely revealed assurance that all will come out right for Israel in the end, that God's faithfulness to his first love will be demonstrated for all to see."<sup>7</sup>

The quotation from Isaiah 59:20 and 21 not only supported Paul's assertion but also hinted at the time this revival will take place. It will happen when Messiah will come out of the

---

<sup>1</sup>Jamieson, et al., p. 1172.

<sup>2</sup>See John Calvin, *The Epistles of Paul the Apostle to the Romans and to the Thessalonians*, p. 255; C. B. Williams, p. 298.

<sup>3</sup>For defense of this view, see Ben L. Merkle, "Romans 11 and the Future of Ethnic Israel," *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 43:4 (December 2000):709-21.

<sup>4</sup>Murray, 2:96-98.

<sup>5</sup>NEB refers to *The New English Bible with the Apocrypha*, and JB refers to *The Jerusalem Bible*.

<sup>6</sup>Cranfield, 2:576.

<sup>7</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9—16*, p. 691.

heavenly Jerusalem (heaven; Gal. 4:26; Heb. 12:22). This will be at His second coming (Zech. 12:10).<sup>1</sup>

"Israel ... was chosen for a fourfold mission: (1) to witness to the unity of God in the midst of universal idolatry (cp. Dt. 6:4 with Isa. 43:10-12); (2) to illustrate to the nations the blessedness of serving the true God (Dt. 33:26-29; 1 Chr. 17:20-21; Ps. 144:15); (3) to receive, preserve, and transmit the Scriptures (Dt. 4:5-8; Rom. 3:1-2); and (4) to be the human channel for the Messiah (Gen. 3:15; 12:3; 22:18; 28:10-14; 49:10; 2 Sam. 7:12-16; Isa. 7:14; 9:6; Mt. 1:1; Rom. 1:3)."<sup>2</sup>

11:27      Isaiah 27:9 also predicted a great removal of Israel's "sins" (i.e., the sins of believing Jews when Christ returns) and connected this removal with the bestowal of the New Covenant blessings on Israel (cf. Jer. 31:31-34).

"... the history of God's dealings with ethnic Israel as set out in Romans 11:1-10, the logic of Israel's reversal of fortune in verses 11-15, supported by the illustration of the olive tree and the regrafting of the natural branches of ethnic Israel into it 'again' in verses 16-24, and the prophecy of the salvation of 'all Israel' in verses 25-27 combine to establish the future of ethnic Israel as a glorious hope of both Israel and the church."<sup>3</sup>

11:28      Under the present economy God views Israel's physical descendants (as a whole) as His "enemies" because of their unbelief. They are enemies of His additionally for the sake of the Gentiles to whom He extends grace in this period of Jewish unbelief. However from the standpoint of their national election for a special purpose, they are the objects of His love because of the patriarchs.

---

<sup>1</sup>See Toussaint and Quine, pp. 146-47.

<sup>2</sup>*The New Scofield ...*, p. 1226.

<sup>3</sup>Johnson, "Evidence from ...," p. 219.

- 11:29 The special privileges that God gave Israel are probably what Paul intended by his reference here to God's "gifts" (cf. 9:4-5). These privileges have intimate connection with God's "calling" of Israel for a special purpose. God will not withdraw these from Israel (they "are irrevocable"). He did not choose Israel for her goodness, and He will not abandon her for her badness. Paul said virtually the same thing about the security of individual Christians in 8:31 through 39.
- 11:30-31 These verses are a warning to Gentile believers. Gentiles should beware of becoming critical of God for planning to bless the Jews in the future. We should also beware of becoming proud because we are presently the special objects of God's "mercy." We need to remember that God chose Israel so that we who are Gentiles could enjoy salvation (Gen. 12:1-3).
- 11:32 The conclusion of the matter is this: As everyone has been disobedient, Gentiles and Jews alike, so God will show "mercy" to all as well (cf. 3:9; Gal. 3:22). That is, He will show mercy to all without distinction (between Gentiles and Jews), not to all without exception (cf. 9:17). This is a great ground of assurance.

"A critical frame of reference in Paul's treatment of Israel's salvation is a distinction between corporate and individual election."<sup>1</sup>

This concludes the argument of chapters 9 through 11.

"Ethnic Israel has a future, because God will accomplish salvation for Israel according to his new-covenant promise. This awaits the fullness of the Gentiles, when Israel's hardening will be removed and when Gentile provocation will have taken its course. All Israel will be saved in such a way that God's mercy will be evident to all."<sup>2</sup>

"Perhaps the view most commonly held among evangelical non-dispensationalists is that Israel's future is simply an

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 737.

<sup>2</sup>J. Lanier Burns, "The Future of Ethnic Israel in Romans 11," in *Dispensationalism, Israel and the Church*, p. 216.

incorporation of that people into the church. Hoekema speaks for many when he writes, '... the future of believing Israelites is not to be separated from the future of believing Gentiles.' He states that Israel has no particular place in God's future salvation economy: 'Israel's hope for the future is exactly the same as that of believing Gentiles: salvation and ultimate glorification through faith in Christ.'"<sup>1</sup>

Nothing remains but to praise God for His righteousness in dealing with Israel as He has and as He will.

#### 4. Praise for God's wise plan 11:33-36

This doxology corresponds to the one at the end of chapter 8, where Paul concluded his exposition of God's plan for bringing His righteousness to humankind (8:31-39). There the emphasis was on the people of God. Here it is on the plan of God. There it was on individual salvation, here it is on the national salvation of the Jews.

"Here theology turns to poetry. Here the seeking of the mind turns to the adoration of the heart."<sup>2</sup>

"In an argument which began with man's rebellion against God as creator (1:18-25), what could be more appropriate than a final acclamation of God the creator?"<sup>3</sup>

Vine noted the chiasmic structure of this doxology:<sup>4</sup>

- A "Oh, the depth
- B of the riches
- C both of the wisdom
- D and knowledge of God!

---

<sup>1</sup>Saucy, *The Case ...*, p. 23. The quotation is from Anthony Hoekema, *The Bible and the Future*, p. 201.

<sup>2</sup>Barclay, p. 167.

<sup>3</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9—16*, p. 704.

<sup>4</sup>Vine, p. 173.

- E How unsearchable are His judgments  
E' and unfathomable His ways!  
D' For who has known the mind of the LORD?  
C' or who became His counselor?  
B' Or who has first given to Him, that it should be paid back to him?  
A' For from Him, and through Him, and to Him are all things. To Him be the glory forever. Amen."

11:33 God's "wisdom" is His ability to arrange His plan so that it results in good for both Jews and Gentiles and His own glory. His "knowledge" testifies to His ability to construct such a plan—His divine ingenuity. His decisions ("judgments") spring from logic that extends beyond human ability to comprehend. His procedures ("ways") are so complex that humans cannot discover them without the aid of divine revelation (cf. Isa. 55:8-9).

"I have heard many Christians say, 'Why are the heathen lost when they haven't heard the gospel? God has no right to condemn them!' My friend, God has every right imaginable. He is *God*. And what He is doing is right. If you don't think it is right, your thinking is wrong. And if you don't think He is being smart, you are wrong. God is not stupid. You and I may be stupid, but God is not."<sup>1</sup>

11:34 Paul agreed with Isaiah again (Isa. 40:13-14). No one can fully know God's "mind." God is so wise that He has no need of counselors.

11:35 Job's observation that God has never needed to depend on human assistance, which would put Him in man's debt (Job 35:7; 41:11), is also true. The fact that God makes people His partners in executing His will in the world does not mean that

---

<sup>1</sup>McGee, 4:726.

He cannot accomplish His purposes without human agents. He can.

11:36 God is the source from which all things come ("from Him"), the means (agent) by which all things happen ("through Him"), and the goal toward which all things are moving ("to Him"). He is likewise the originator, sustainer, and completer of everything ultimately (cf. Col. 1:16-17). In view of all these attributes, roles, and redemptive works (vv. 33-36) He deserves all "glory forever."

The primary focus of this doxology, which harmonizes with the theme of chapters 9 through 11, is God's great plan of salvation through history. However, "all things" (v. 36) includes the lives of individuals as well.

In chapter 11 Paul cited five witnesses to Israel's future salvation: himself (v. 1), Elijah (vv. 2-10), the Gentiles (vv. 11-15), the patriarchs (vv. 16-24), and God (vv. 25-36).<sup>1</sup>

Paul had now concluded his theological exposition of how unrighteous human beings can obtain the righteousness of God. Only the explanation of the implications of possessing this righteousness remained for him to spell out. This practical guidance (in 12:1—15:13) is especially important since the Christian is no longer under the regulations of the Mosaic Law (7:6; 10:4). What follows is New Covenant teaching.

## **VI. THE PRACTICE OF GOD'S RIGHTEOUSNESS 12:1—15:13**

In contrasting chapters 1 through 11 with chapters 12 through 16 of Romans, perhaps the most important distinction is that the first part deals primarily with God's actions for humanity and the last part deals with people's actions in response to God's. This is an oversimplification of the book, but the distinction is a valid one. God's provision contrasts with people's responsibility to behave in a manner consistent with what God has done, is doing, and will do for them (cf. Eph. 4:1; Phil. 2:12-13). The first part is more information for belief whereas the last part is more exhortation

---

<sup>1</sup>See Fruchtenbaum, *The Book ...*, pp. 311-86, for a discussion of differing view on chapters 9—11.

for action. The first part stresses right relations with God and the last part right relations with other people.

"Doctrine must always precede exhortation since in doctrine the saint is shown his exalted position which makes the exhortation to a holy life, a reasonable one, and in doctrine, the saint is informed as to the resources of grace he possesses with which to obey the exhortations."<sup>1</sup>

"Someone may suggest that we have already studied the practical application in the section on sanctification. There the gospel walked in shoe leather, it is true, but there is a sharp distinction in these two sections. Under 'sanctification' we were dealing with Christian *character*; in this section we are dealing with Christian *conduct*. There it was the *inner* man; here it is the *outward* man. There it was the *condition* of the Christian; here it is the *consecration* of the Christian. There it was who the Christian *is*; here it is what he *does*. We have seen the *privileges* of grace; we now consider the *precepts* of grace. Enunciation of the way of life must be followed by evidences of life. Announcement of justification by faith must be augmented by activity of life."<sup>2</sup>

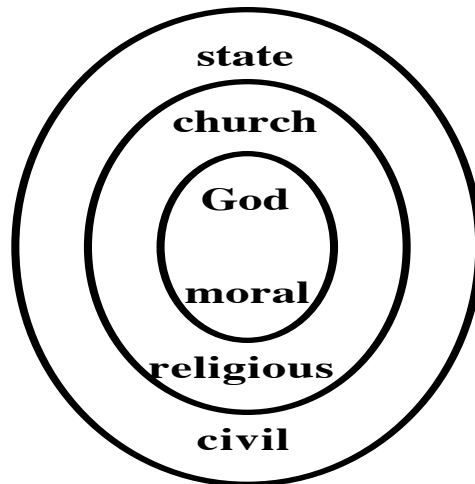
"Sin is death, disease, and departure; righteousness must meet all three aspects. In Romans 3:21 to 5:11, the main thought is of sin as death; in 5:12 to 8:39, of sin as disease. In chapters 12 to 16 the ruling idea is of sin as departure. Thus the Apostle deals with justification, sanctification, and consecration."<sup>3</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Wuest, 1:2:204.

<sup>2</sup>McGee, 4:728.

<sup>3</sup>Griffith Thomas, *Grace and ...*, pp. 44-45.



Essentially this exhortation, which is both positive and negative, deals with behavior within the spheres of life where the believer lives. These areas are his or her relationship to God, to other members of the body of Christ, and to the civil state and unbelievers. There is a general correspondence here with the instruction that God gave the Israelites through Moses for life in Israel. Paul dealt with the same areas of life: moral, religious and civil life. The differences with the Mosaic Code are as striking as the similarities. Romans does not contain all the Law of Christ (1 Cor. 9:21; Gal. 6:2), but each of the other New Testament books makes its unique contribution to our understanding of God's will for Christians.

"One of the most striking features of Rom. 12:1—15:13 is the way in which its various themes resemble teaching that Paul gives elsewhere [cf. 12:1-2 and Eph. 4:17-24; 12:3-8 and 1 Cor. 12 and Eph. 4:11-17; 12:9-21 and 1 Thess. 4:9-12 and 1 Cor. 13; 13:8-10 and Gal. 5:13-15; 13:11-14 and 1 Thess. 5:1-11; 14:1—15:13 and 1 Cor. 8—10]."<sup>1</sup>

"The main idea running through the whole section seems to be that of peace and unity for the Church in all relations both internal and external."<sup>2</sup>

Chapters 12 and 13 give directions for Christian conduct generally, and 14:1 through 15:13 deal with a specific problem that the Roman Christians faced and which all Christians share.

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 745.

<sup>2</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 351.



"It is so easy to put down rules of conduct, but Paul is not doing that. He has delivered us from the Mosaic Law, and he did not deliver us in order to put us under another legal system. ... However, Paul puts down great principles that are to guide the believer."<sup>1</sup>

#### A. DEDICATION TO GOD 12:1-2

Verses 1 and 2 of chapter 12 deal with the Christian's most important relationship: his or her relationship to God. These verses are both parallel to the sections to follow that deal with the Christian's conduct, and they introduce them. Our relationship to God is foundational and governs all our other conduct. Dunn entitled this section of verses "the basis for responsible living—the Christian's worship."<sup>2</sup>

Paul had already called for the Christian to present himself or herself to God (6:13, 19). Now he repeated that duty as the Christian's most imperative obligation. He had also spoken of false worship and corrupted minds (1:25, 28). This exhortation ties into these two former passages especially.

12:1 "Therefore" draws a conclusion from all that Paul had presented so far, not just chapters 9 through 11 (cf. 2:1; 5:1; 8:1). This is clear from what he proceeded to say. The charge rises out of humankind's universal condemnation by God (3:20), the justification that God has provided freely (5:1), and the assurance of acceptance that the believing sinner can have (8:1). Because of all this it is only reasonable that we present our lives to God as living sacrifices (12:1). In particular, the exhortation to present ourselves to God in 6:13 and 19 is in view.

Exhortation now replaces instruction. Urging (Gr. *parakaleo*, to urge) lies between commanding and beseeching. "I urge you" is "one of the tenderest expressions in all the Bible."<sup>3</sup> Paul used *parakaleo* about 50 times in his epistles (1 Cor. 4:16; Eph. 4:1; 1 Tim. 2:1; et al.). Probably he did not command his readers because the attitude with which one presents himself or

---

<sup>1</sup>McGee, 4:728.

<sup>2</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9—16*, p. 706.

<sup>3</sup>J. P. McBeth, *Exegetical and Practical Commentary on the Epistle to the Romans*, p. 229.

herself to God is crucial. The apostle did not want his readers to comply because he had commanded them to do so but because they wanted to in response to what God had done for them. Therefore he made his appeal as strong as possible without commanding. He had previously commanded this conduct (6:13, 19).

"... I BESEECH YOU [AV] — What an astonishing word to come from God! From a God against whom we had sinned, and under whose judgment we were! What a word to us, believers,—a race of sinners so lately at enmity with God,—'I beseech you!'"<sup>1</sup>

The phrase "the mercies of God" refers to all that Paul revealed in this epistle that God has done for the believer. Paul used the singular "mercy" in the Greek text (*oiktirmon*) evidently because of his recent exposition of God's mercy in 11:30 through 32. Mercy denotes the quality in God that led Him to deliver us from our sin and misery. It contrasts with grace. Mercy expresses deliverance from condemnation that we deserve, and grace describes the bestowal of blessings that we do not deserve. Paul called us to sacrifice ourselves to God because He has been merciful to us. In pagan religions of Paul's day the worshippers typically first offered sacrifices to secure the mercy of the gods. That is unnecessary in Christianity because God has taken the initiative and provided the sacrifice that secured His mercy for us.

Hebrew thought viewed the body as the representation of the whole person. Paul was urging the presentation of the whole person, not just the outer shell (cf. 6:13).<sup>2</sup> However the body does stand in antithesis to the mind in verse 2, so the physical body does seem to be what Paul was stressing particularly (cf. 1 Cor. 6:20; 2 Cor. 4:10; Phil. 1:20).<sup>3</sup> Jewish priests needed to present themselves without blemish as sacrifices to God

---

<sup>1</sup>Newell, p. 447. Cf. Phile. 9-10; 2 Cor. 5:20.

<sup>2</sup>Cranfield, 2:598-99; Griffith Thomas, *St. Paul's Epistle ...*, p. 324.

<sup>3</sup>Liddon, p. 228; D. Edmond Hiebert, "Presentation and Transformation: An Exposition of Romans 12:1-2," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 151:603 (July-September 1994):314.

before they could serve Him (cf. Mal. 1:8-13). The same is true in Christianity. The believer-priest's whole life needs to be given over to the Lord (cf. Lev. 1). We need to separate from sin to God. This is the essence of holiness (cf. 6:19). This kind of "sacrifice" is "acceptable" to God and pleases Him.

Some scholars claim that the tense of the verb translated "present" (aorist in Greek) presupposes a decisive offering made once-for-all.<sup>1</sup> Others say that the aorist tense does not carry the once-for-all meaning, and that Paul simply meant that we should make this offering, without implying how often.<sup>2</sup> In view of the nature of the commitment that Paul called for, it seems that we should make it decisively, as often as we desire. What the Christian needs to present is his or her life for "service" to God. In Israel the whole burnt offering, which represented the entire person of the offerer (Lev. 1), burned up completely on the altar. The offerer could not reclaim it because it belonged to God. Paul implied that this should also characterize the Christian's self-sacrifice.

"The sacrifices of the new order do not consist in taking the lives of others, like the ancient animal sacrifices, but in giving one's own (cf. Heb. 13:15-16; 1 Pet. 2:5)."<sup>3</sup>

"Spiritual service of worship" or "reasonable service" (AV) means that the sacrifice should be thoughtful and deliberate. The animals in Jewish sacrifices could not offer themselves this way because they were animals.

"Paul means, a worship consisting not in outward rites but in the movement of man's inward being. This is better described as 'spiritual worship' than as 'rational', for Paul is not thinking of what is meant in modern English by 'rational'."<sup>4</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>E.g., Harrison, p. 127.

<sup>2</sup>E.g., Moo, p. 750.

<sup>3</sup>Bruce, p. 213.

<sup>4</sup>Barrett, p. 231.

There are many ways in which we can worship God, but self-dedication is the most fundamental and important way. This "service of worship" should precede all other service of worship, or else worship and service are superficial. Two notable examples of this decisive dedication of self are Isaac (Gen. 22) and our Lord Jesus Christ (John 6:38). Both individuals allowed themselves to be bound and offered up as sacrifices.

It was during his first visit to Great Britain in 1867, at the age of 30, that D. L. Moody, who became perhaps the most effective evangelist of the 19<sup>th</sup> century, heard the challenging words: "The world has yet to see what God will do, with, and for, and through, and in and by, the man who is fully and wholly consecrated to Him." He responded: "I will try my utmost to be that man."<sup>1</sup>

12:2 Verse 1 deals with *making* the commitment, and verse 2 deals with *maintaining* it.

"The first verse calls for an explicit act; the second commands a resultant lifelong process. These verses are a call for an act of presentation and the resultant duty of transformation."<sup>2</sup>

Both activities are important. The present tense of the Greek verbs *suschematizesthe* and *metamorphousthe*, translated "be conformed" and "be transformed" in verse 2, indicates a continuing responsibility, in contrast to the aorist tense in verse 1 that stresses a decisive act. The "world" (Gr. *aion*) is the spirit of our age that seeks to exclude God from life (1 John 2:15). The world seeks to "squeeze you into its own mold."<sup>3</sup> The Christian should be continually renewing his or her "mind" by returning mentally to the decision to dedicate self to God, and by reaffirming that decision. This continual rededication to God will result in the transformation of the

---

<sup>1</sup>W. R. Moody, *The Life of Dwight L. Moody*, p. 122.

<sup>2</sup>Hiebert, "Presentation and ...," p. 312.

<sup>3</sup>J. B. Phillips' *The New Testament in Modern English*.

Christian into Christ's image (8:29; cf. Mark 9:2-3). A daily rededication is none too often.

"This re-programming of the mind does not take place overnight but is a lifelong process by which our way of thinking is to resemble more and more the way God wants us to think."<sup>1</sup>

The Holy Spirit is the unidentified transformer whom Paul set in contrast to the world (8:9-11; cf. Matt. 17:1-2; 2 Cor. 3:18; 6:17-18; 7:1; Col. 3:9-10; 1 Thess. 5:23; Titus 3:5). "Prove" or "test and approve" (NIV) involves evaluating and choosing to practice what is the will of God instead of what the world recommends (cf. Eph. 5:8-10). We clarify what God's will for us is by rededicating ourselves to God often. God's will sometimes becomes blurred when our commitment to Him wavers (cf. Eph. 5:8-10; Jas. 1:6-8). Nevertheless, it is always "good." Notice that total commitment to the Lordship of Jesus Christ is a prerequisite for experiencing "the will of God."

Dedication results in discernment that leads to delight in God's will. The initial dedication and the subsequent reaffirmation both please God (vv. 1-2; cf. Phil. 4:18; Heb. 13:16). "Good" means essentially good. "Acceptable" means pleasing to God. "Perfect" means it cannot get any better.

Kenneth Wuest's interpretive paraphrase of this verse is helpful:

"And stop assuming an outward expression that does not come from within you and is not representative of what you are in your inner being, but is patterned after this age; but change your outward expression to one that comes from within and is representative of your inner being, by the renewing of your mind, resulting in your putting to the test what is the will of God, the good and well-pleasing, and complete will, and having found that

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 757.

it meets specification, placing your approval upon it."<sup>1</sup>

Romans 12:1 and 2 are extremely important verses for Christians. They express our most important responsibility to God, namely, submitting completely to His Lordship over our lives. The popular saying: "God is my co-pilot," does not give God His rightful place. God wants and deserves to be our Pilot, not our co-pilot. Christians should make this commitment as close to the moment of their justification as possible. However, notice that Paul addressed his appeal to believers, not to the unsaved. Dedication to God is a response to the mercy of God that we already received in salvation. It is not a condition for receiving that mercy. It is a voluntary commitment that every Christian should make out of love for the Savior, but it is not one that every Christian does make. It is possible to be a Christian without ever making this commitment, since it is voluntary.

"To require from the unsaved a dedication to His lordship for their salvation is to make imperative what is only voluntary for believers (Rom. 12:1; 1 Pet. 3:15)."<sup>2</sup>

"With this combined emphasis on commitment to and dependence on God, marked out in distinction from the more typical Jewish reliance on cult [ritual worship] and law, Paul has set out the basis for responsible living and for the more specific parenthesis [exhortation] which follows."<sup>3</sup>

"What follows is instruction on how the newly redefined people of God should live as such ..."<sup>4</sup>

## **B. CONDUCT WITHIN THE CHURCH 12:3-21**

Every Christian has the same duty toward God, namely, self-dedication (vv. 1-2). But the will of God for one Christian will differ from His will for another concerning life and ministry within the body of Christ, the church (vv. 3-21).

---

<sup>1</sup>Wuest, 1:2:209.

<sup>2</sup>Livingston Blauvelt Jr., "Does the Bible Teach Lordship Salvation?" *Bibliotheca Sacra* 143:569 (January-March 1986):38.

<sup>3</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9—16*, p. 718.

<sup>4</sup>*Ibid.*, p. 708.

### 1. The diversity of gifts 12:3-8

12:3 Paul began this pericope with a reminder of his apostolic authority. He probably did this because what he was about to say required personal application that would affect the conduct of his readers. The Romans had not met Paul personally, so he urged them to receive his teaching humbly. A humble attitude was also important as they evaluated and exercised the individual abilities that God had given each of them (cf. 1 Pet. 4:10). Paul had had experiences with Christians who were proud because of their spiritual gifts in Corinth, where he was when he wrote this epistle (cf. 1 Cor. 12:14-31; 13:4; 4:12, 20).

The main point of this entire paragraph (vv. 3-8) is that the Christian should not "think more highly of himself than he ought to think" but use "sound judgment" in evaluating himself or herself.

"Humility is the direct effect of consecration, because pride is, and ever has been, the great enemy of true righteousness."<sup>1</sup>

The "faith" in view in this verse, and in verse 6, seems to refer to one's ability to view and use his or her gifts as abilities that God has given. It also involves trusting in God to work through us to bring blessing to others. Such a view of oneself, in relation to his or her gifts, is "sound judgment" because it is consistent with reality.

The "measure of faith," therefore, does not refer to how much faith one can muster up but to the amount of faith that God has given each Christian. This amount varies from believer to believer. We can see this evidenced in that it is easier for some Christians to trust God than it is for others to do so. Spiritual gifts do not reflect the worth of the person who has them. For example, a person who has gifts that enable him or her to minister effectively to large crowds of people should not conclude that he or she is a superior Christian.

---

<sup>1</sup>Griffith Thomas, *St. Paul's Epistle ...*, p. 331.

"The man who is humble before God is unlikely to be arrogant before his fellow-creatures."<sup>1</sup>

12:4-5 It is important that we remember that we are part of a larger organism ("body"). We are not just a loose collection of individuals ("parts") each doing our own thing. Paul had previously used the body to illustrate the church in 1 Corinthians 12. What he said here summarized the main idea that he expounded more fully there. The body of Christ is a unified organism ("one body"), and its members (lit. "the parts") are diverse, personally and in their functions.

"Your right hand has never yet had a fight with the left: on the contrary, each constantly helps the other!"<sup>2</sup>

All the members belong to each other. There is mutuality in the church. As members of each other we cannot work independently effectively. Each member benefits from the contribution of every other member as well. This realization should help us to avoid becoming proud.

"The point is that each member functions to serve the body, not the body to serve the members."<sup>3</sup>

12:6 The "gifts" that we have are abilities that God has given us by His "grace" (cf. 1 Cor. 12:6; Eph. 4:7; 1 Pet. 4:10). They are capacities for His service.<sup>4</sup>

"Spiritual gifts are tools to build with, not toys to play with or weapons to fight with."<sup>5</sup>

The list of seven gifts that follows is not exhaustive but only illustrative (cf. 1 Cor. 12:27-28). Paul's point here was that it is important that we "use" our gifts and that we use them in

---

<sup>1</sup>Barrett, p. 235.

<sup>2</sup>Newell, pp. 460-61.

<sup>3</sup>Witmer, p. 488.

<sup>4</sup>For defense of the view that spiritual gifts are ministries rather than abilities, see Kenneth Berding, "Confusing Word and Concept in 'Spiritual Gifts': Have We Forgotten James Barr's Exhortations?" *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 43:1 (March 200):37-51.

<sup>5</sup>Wiersbe, 1:555.



the proper way. All the gifts must be used according to the "proportion" (Gr. *analogia*) of the faith that God has "given" each of us in order to be effective. The "faith" in view, as in verse 3, is probably the amount of faith that God has given us, not what we believe, namely, Christian teaching. In other words, we should use our gifts trusting in God as much as we can. Definitions of these seven gifts follows:

(1) Probably Paul meant "prophecy" in the sense of communicating revealed truth in order to exhort, encourage, and comfort people (cf. 1 Cor. 14:3, 31) and, perhaps, to praise God (1 Chron. 25:1). Predicting or proclaiming new revelation is probably not what he meant here. All the other gifts listed here have served the whole church throughout its history, so probably Paul viewed prophecy this way, too. If so, none of the seven gifts listed here are "sign gifts."

12:7 All the gifts that Paul mentioned in verses 6 through 8 need to be exercised within the body of Christ for its members' mutual benefit (cf. v. 5). Obviously other gifts have other purposes. However Paul was stressing here the need to recognize that the members of the body contribute to the common welfare. For each gift listed, he was speaking of the way we use these gifts.

(2) "Service" or "serving" (v. 7, Gr. *diakonia*) probably refers to ministering to the material needs of other believers.<sup>1</sup>

(3) "Teaching" involves explaining what God has revealed (cf. 1 Cor. 14:6). It differs from prophesying in that prophesying (from *propheteuo*, lit. to speak forth) evidently included communicating any word from God, inspired or uninspired (1 Cor. 12:28; Eph. 4:11).<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Cranfield, 2:622.

<sup>2</sup>See John E. Johnson, "The Old Testament Offices as Paradigm for Pastoral Identity," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 152:606 (April-June 1995):182-200.

"... teaching preserves continuity, but prophecy gives life; with teaching a community will not die, but without prophecy it will not live."<sup>1</sup>

12:8 (4) "Exhorts" translates the Greek word *parakalesis* (cf. v. 1), sometimes rendered "comfort." Both words are good translations. The context provides the clue to the main idea wherever the word appears. Here, "exhortation" is perhaps better. Whereas teaching appeals to the mind, exhortation (preaching) appeals to the will.

(5) Giving is capable of broad application within the body. We should practice giving with singleness of heart, namely, freedom from mixed motives (cf. Acts 5:1-11), "in sincere concern."<sup>2</sup> The idea is not so much giving lavishly as giving single-mindedly, whole-heartedly: in order to please the Lord.

"Mixed motives wither liberality."<sup>3</sup>

(6) People with "leadership" gifts experience the temptation to simply enjoy the benefits of their position instead of providing true leadership by serving. Instead of "the one who is in leadership, with diligence" the RSV has "he who gives aid, with zeal."<sup>4</sup>

(7) Showing "mercy" relates to ministering to the sick and specially needy. A cheerful rather than a grudging attitude is an important part of such ministry.

"He [Paul] did not think of spiritual gifts as synonymous with the eye-catching and very physical; the charismatic Spirit came to expression characteristically for him in service, no doubt often hidden from the public eye, in the humdrum maintenance of others in the basics of everyday living, as the Spirit of the crucified."<sup>5</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>James D. G. Dunn, *Jesus and the Spirit*, p. 284.

<sup>2</sup>Idem, *Romans 9—16*, p. 730.

<sup>3</sup>Vine, p. 180.

<sup>4</sup>RSV refers to *The Holy Bible: Revised Standard Version*.

<sup>5</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9—16*, p. 735.

"With these seven works Paul covers all the main lines of activity in the church."<sup>1</sup>

## 2. The necessity of love 12:9-21

Verses 9 through 13 deal with the importance of demonstrating love to fellow believers, and verses 14 through 21 broaden this responsibility to include wider application to non-believers.

"From the thought of humility the idea of love naturally follows, for humility will necessarily express itself in affection for those around."<sup>2</sup>

### **Love for fellow believers 12:9-13**

"Nowhere else in Paul's writings do we find a more concise collection of ethical injunctions. In these five verses are thirteen exhortations ranging from love of Christians to hospitality for strangers. There are no finite verbs in the paragraph. There are, however, ten participles that serve as imperatives. In the three other clauses (vv. 9, 10, 11) an imperative must be supplied. Each of the thirteen exhortations could serve as the text for a full-length sermon. What they deal with are basic to effective Christian living."<sup>3</sup>

12:9 (1) "Love" is of primary importance (cf. Lev. 19:18; Matt. 22:39; 1 Cor. 13). However, it must be sincere ("free of hypocrisy"; cf. 1 John 4:19-21). This command acts as a heading for the following list of exhortations.

"Paul is not always talking specifically about love, but he keeps coming back to love as the single most important criterion for approved Christian behavior."<sup>4</sup>

(2) The totally committed Christian should "detest what is evil" like his or her Lord does. This is a matter of the heart,

---

<sup>1</sup>Lenski, p. 765.

<sup>2</sup>Griffith Thomas, *St. Paul's Epistle ...*, p. 337.

<sup>3</sup>Mounce, p. 236.

<sup>4</sup>Moo, p. 774.

which God can change. Some forms of evil remain attractive to believers, but God can, over time, change our attitude toward them.

(3) Clinging to "what is good" is the opposite of hating what is evil. Seeking out and pursuing good things can help us wean our hearts away from what is evil. There is an "expulsive power of a new affection."<sup>1</sup>

"What God seeks in the believer is not so much a single worthy act as it is a continuing quality of life."<sup>2</sup>

12:10 (4) Christians need to express love to individual people as well as to ideals (v. 9). We should love "one another" like brothers and sisters love each other. "Devoted" (Gr. *philostorgoi*) suggests family affection (cf. 1 Tim. 5:1-2). This is one of four Greek words for love, the others being *agape* (self-sacrificing love), *philos* (affectionate regard), and *eros* (physical love).

"This too is part of the redefinition of boundaries in which Paul engages—a sense of family belongingness which transcended immediate family ties and did not depend on natural or ethnic bonds [in contrast to Judaism]."<sup>3</sup>

(5) Giving recognition and appreciation to those who deserve it is a concrete way of expressing love. We are to do this by giving "preference" to others over ourselves.

12:11 (6) It is natural for Christians to slack off in their "diligence" in when they have been Christians for some time. Diligence involves careful and persistent work or effort.

---

<sup>1</sup>Thomas Chalmers, *The Expulsive Power of a New Affection*.

<sup>2</sup>Mounce, p. 237.

<sup>3</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9–16*, p. 741.

(7) Apollos was a model of someone who maintained fervency in his service (Acts 18:24-25; cf. Rev. 3:15-16), as was Paul. They were "aglow with the Spirit."<sup>1</sup>

(8) It is also a temptation to turn away from "serving the Lord." Though changing circumstances and the seasons of life may affect where and how we serve the Lord, we should always look for ways to serve Him—even after retirement.

12:12 (9) We must never lose sight of our "hope" as believers. This will help us to persevere "in tribulation" (cf. 5:3-4). The NEB translates this phrase "Let hope keep you joyful."

"I think of a brother down in my Southland years ago. In a church service they were giving favorite Scripture verses. He stood and said that his favorite verse was 'It came to pass.' Everyone looked puzzled. The preacher stood up and said, 'Brother, how in the world can "It came to pass" be your favorite?' His answer was, 'When I have trouble, and when I have problems, I like to read that verse, 'It came to pass,' and I know that my trouble or my problem has come to pass; it hasn't come to stay.' He was looking for a new day out there, and that is what Paul has in mind when he says, 'rejoicing in hope.'<sup>2</sup>

(10) Perseverance is not automatic for the Christian. Paul encouraged it here, and there are many other exhortations in Scripture to "keep on keeping on."

(11) "Prayer" is our great resource whenever we feel stress and strain (cf. Phil. 4:6-7). Note the same progression—from hope, to perseverance, to prayer—in 8:24 through 27. We should not just pray, but we should be "devoted" to prayer (cf. Acts 1:14).<sup>3</sup> It should have high priority in our lives.

---

<sup>1</sup>Ibid., p. 742.

<sup>2</sup>McGee, 4:732.

<sup>3</sup>See Dan R. Crawford, compiler, *Giving Ourselves to Prayer*.

Frequent attendance at prayer meetings is one indication of devotion to prayer.

12:13 (12) We should never be so self-centered that we fail to reach out to others and contribute "to the needs of the saints."

"It is not enough to draw out the soul, but we must draw out the purse to the hungry."<sup>1</sup>

(13) The practice of "hospitality" was especially important in Paul's day because there were few public lodging places, and those that existed were more often than not undesirable. But "hospitality" (Gr. *philoxenian*, lit. love to strangers) is still important in our day. Opening one's home to others is a unique way to demonstrate Christian love to them.

"... one is not just to wait and take the stranger in, if he actually presents himself at the door, but to go out and look for those to whom one can show hospitality ..."<sup>2</sup>

God the Father and God the Son are our great examples in all of these exhortations.<sup>3</sup>

### Love for all 12:14-21

In this section Paul urged activity that is contrary to how people normally function, that is, how they operate in the flesh.

"The exhortations in this section are to some extent parallel to those in the Sermon on the Mount ..."<sup>4</sup>

12:14 Paul repeated Jesus' instruction here (Matt. 5:44; Luke 6:27-28). To "persecute" (Gr. *dioko*) means to harass, trouble, or molest. To "bless" (Gr. *eulogeo*) involves both wishing God's best on people and praying for them.

---

<sup>1</sup>Henry, p. 1786.

<sup>2</sup>Cranfield, 2:639-40. See also Vine, p. 181.

<sup>3</sup>See also Martin M. Culy, "Romans 12:9-13: Greek Grammar and How to Worship God," *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 65:4 (December 2022):719-32.

<sup>4</sup>Vine, p. 181.

"The principle of nonretaliation for personal injury permeates the entire New Testament."<sup>1</sup>

12:15 Believers should share the joys and sorrows of their neighbors, especially fellow believers (1 Cor. 12:26; Phil. 4:14).

"To weep with those that weep is easier than to rejoice with those who rejoice. Those who rejoice neither need, expect, nor feel grateful for sympathy in the same degree as those who weep."<sup>2</sup>

"His [Jesus'] first miracle [i.e., turning water into wine, John 2:1-11] was performed in rejoicing with them that rejoice and His greatest miracle [i.e., the raising of Lazarus, John 11:1-46] while weeping with those that wept."<sup>3</sup>

12:16 The first part of this verse means: "Have equal regard for one another" (NEB). Feelings of superiority are neither realistic nor appropriate for those who owe all to God's grace. The secret to not being "wise in" one's "own estimation" is to remember how much we do not know.

12:17 The Christian can never justify returning "evil" treatment "for evil" treatment. The second exhortation probably means that we should give thought to how we do what is right, so that our witness may be most effective to believers and unbelievers alike (cf. Col. 4:5; 1 Tim. 3:7). Sometimes Christians do things that everyone else thinks are inappropriate. This should never be.

12:18 Paul strongly advocated being a peacemaker (cf. Matt. 5:9), but he did not promote "peace" at any price. In some situations peace might give way to conflict if, for example, the truth is at stake (cf. Gal. 2:11). In any case, the believer should not be the instigator of trouble under normal circumstances. Note Paul's two qualifiers regarding living at peace in this

---

<sup>1</sup>Mounce, p. 239.

<sup>2</sup>Denney, 2:693.

<sup>3</sup>Vine, p. 182.

verse. It is not always possible to live peacefully with some people, because they make it impossible.

"Just do the best you can."<sup>1</sup>

12:19 If hostility does erupt, the Christian should not retaliate ("take your own revenge"; cf. v. 17; Prov. 20:22; 24:29; Ps. 94:1; Matt. 5:39; Luke 6:29; 1 Thess. 4:6; Heb. 10:30). Rather, he or she should trust God to right the wrong (cf. 1 Sam. 24—26). Long ago God promised to take care of His people when others wrong them (Deut. 32:35). We have a responsibility to defend the weak and to pursue justice, but we should not retaliate, but trust God, when others attack us personally (cf. David).

"There was a man, an officer in one of the churches I served, who did me a great injury, a terrible injury. My first thought was to clobber him, but I remembered this passage of Scripture. I went to the Lord and said, 'Lord, I'd like to hit back and I can, but I don't think I will. I'll turn him over to You, and I expect you to handle him.' Well, I saw that man the other day. I have never looked at a person who is as unhappy as that man is. He has *troubles*, friend. The Lord has taken him to the woodshed and whipped him within an inch of his life. When I looked into that man's face, I couldn't help but feel sorry for him."<sup>2</sup>

12:20 Instead of showing one's enemy unkindness, the believer should do him or her positive good (cf. Matt. 5:44). This may result in the antagonist feeling ashamed, acknowledging his error, and even turning to God in repentance.

One interpretation of heaping "burning coals on his head" is that it figuratively describes doing good that results in the conviction and shame of the enemy.<sup>3</sup> The expression supposedly alludes to the old custom of carrying burning coals

---

<sup>1</sup>McGee, 4:733.

<sup>2</sup>Ibid., 4:734.

<sup>3</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 365; Witmer, p. 490.



in a pan. When one's fire went out at home, a person would have to go to a neighbor and request hot coals that he or she would then carry home in a pan, typically on the head. Carrying the coals involved some danger, discomfort, and uneasiness for the person carrying them. Nevertheless they were the evidence of the neighbor's love. Likewise the person who receives good for evil feels uncomfortable because of his neighbor's love. This guilt may convict the wrongdoer of his or her ways in a gentle manner.<sup>1</sup>

A better interpretation, I think, takes the "burning coals" as a figure of God's judgment that will come on the enemy if he persists in his antagonism. The figure of coals of fire in the Old Testament consistently refers to God's anger and judgment (cf. 2 Sam. 22:9, 13; Ps. 11:6; 18:13; 140:9-10; Prov. 25:21-22). Thus the meaning appears to be that the Christian can return good for evil with the assurance that God will eventually punish his or her enemy.<sup>2</sup>

12:21 Paul again concluded his exhortations with a summary. Being "overcome by evil" means giving in to the temptation to pay back evil for evil. When most people do wrong they expect to receive evil from those that they have wronged. When they receive kindness instead their hard hearts often become softer. The best way to get rid of an enemy is to turn him or her into a friend.<sup>3</sup>

There is a progression in 12:9 through 21. Paul moved from the Christian's duty to his fellow believers to acts that would affect non-Christians as well. However all that Paul wrote in 12:3 through 21 is directly applicable to life within the body of Christ. The believer may encounter enemies in the church as well as in the world.

---

<sup>1</sup>Cf. Griffith Thomas, *St. Paul's Epistle ...*, p. 347.

<sup>2</sup>See John N. Day, "'Coals of Fire' in Romans 12:19-20," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 160:640 (October-December 2003):414-20; John Piper, *"Love Your Enemies": Jesus' Love Command in the Synoptic Gospels and in the Early Christian Paraenesis*, p. 115; and Krister Stendahl, "Hate, Non-Retaliation, and Love: 1 QS x, 17-20 and Rom. 12:19-20," *Harvard Theological Review* 55(1962):352.

<sup>3</sup>Bruce, p. 218.

"He [Paul] takes it for granted that Christians will live out their daily lives and wider relationships motivated by the same love as in their relationships with fellow believers."<sup>1</sup>

The general nature of the commands in this pericope illustrates the essentially gracious character of the New Covenant's Law of Christ under which Christians now live. Compare this with the legal nature of the commands in the Mosaic Law (cf. 10:4). God gave the Israelites many explicit commands about how they were to behave in a multitude of specific situations. The commands in verses 9 through 21, as well as those in all the New Testament, are much more general, and they are more like principles. This is one reason the New Testament writers said that the Israelites lived under law and we live under grace.

### C. CONDUCT WITHIN THE STATE CH. 13

This chapter broadens the Christian's sphere of responsibility by extending it to include the civil government under which he or she lives. Romans 13 is the premier New Testament passage that explains the believer's civil responsibilities (cf. Mark 12:17; John 18:33-38; Titus 3:1; 1 Pet. 2:13-17). Here Paul expounded what it means to give to Caesar what belongs to him (Matt. 22:21). This subject has bearing on the spread of the gospel, so it is especially appropriate in this epistle. The connection with 12:17 through 21 is obvious. This passage also ties in with 12:1 and 2 as one sphere of application of that exhortation. The church is not a nation among nations, as Israel was. Consequently it was important that Paul should clarify Christians' duties to our earthly rulers as well as our duty to our heavenly Ruler.<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9–16*, p. 756.

<sup>2</sup>See John A. Witmer, "The Man with Two Countries," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 133:532 (October-December 1976):338-49; W. Robert Cook, "Biblical Light on the Christian's Civil Responsibility," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 127:505 (January-March 1970):44-47; and Charles C. Ryrie, *What You Should Know about Social Responsibility*, pp. 77-84; or idem, *You Mean the Bible Teaches That ...*, pp. 11-22. For the view that the Christian has only one citizenship—in heaven—but has responsibilities on earth, see Fred R. Lybrand Jr., *Heavenly Citizenship: The Spiritual Alternative to Power Politics*.

### 1. Conduct towards the government 13:1-7

Paul passed from a loosely connected series of exhortations in 12:9 through 21 to a well-organized argument about a single subject in 13:1 through 7 (cf. Matt. 22:15-22; Mark 12:13-17; Luke 20:20-26; 1 Pet. 2:13-14).

"Forbidding the Christian from taking vengeance and allowing God to exercise this right in the last judgment [cf. 12:19-21] might lead one to think that God was letting evildoers have their way in this world. Not so, says Paul in 13:1-7: for God, through governing authorities, is even now inflicting wrath on evildoers (vv. 3-4)."<sup>1</sup>

13:1 When Paul wrote "Every person" (Gr. *psyche*) he probably had every Christian person in mind, since he was writing to Christians. Nevertheless what he taught about his readers' conduct with regard to their civil government also applies to the unsaved. He was not legislating Christian behavior for unbelievers, but when unbelievers behave as he counseled the best responses follow for them too.

Subjection, or submission ("be subject"), involves placing oneself under the "authority" of another and doing or not doing what the authority requires. Paul did not say "obey." Submission includes obedience, but it also includes an attitude from which the obedience springs. Submission involves an attitude of compliance and deference that is not necessarily present in obedience. Submission implies support. The Christian might have to disobey his government (cf. Acts 5:29), but in those cases he or she must still be submissive and bear the consequences of his or her disobedience (cf. Dan. 4:17, 25, 32). "Governing authorities" is a term that embraces all the rulers who govern the citizen.

"Paul's reminder is, in effect, to say: since you cannot change the terms under which you live, and since your position is already hazardous,

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 792.

remember the political realities of the politically powerless and live accordingly."<sup>1</sup>

Every ruler exercises his or her authority because God has allowed him or her to occupy his or her position—even Satan (Luke 4:6). The Christian should acknowledge that the government under which he or she lives has received authority from God to govern, regardless of whether it governs well or poorly.

God has established three institutions to control life in our dispensation: the family (Gen. 2:18-25), the civil government (Gen. 9:1-7), and the church (Acts 2). In each institution there are authorities to whom we need to submit for God's will to be done. Women are not the only people that God commands to be submissive or supportive (Eph. 5:22). Male and female adults, children, citizens, and church members also need to demonstrate a submissive spirit.

"... the prime task of government is to establish order; organized central force is the sole alternative to incalculable and disruptive force in private hands."<sup>2</sup>

13:2 Refusal to submit to one's government is tantamount to refusing to submit to God. Those who resist God's ordained authority can expect to receive "condemnation" by the government. This condemnation is really the indirect judgment of God (cf. Matt. 26:52).

"Capital punishment was ordained in Genesis 9:5-6, and it has not been abolished [by God]."<sup>3</sup>

"The clear implication is of a state of affairs, a structure of society, that cannot be changed, so

---

<sup>1</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9—16*, p. 770.

<sup>2</sup>Durant, p. 68.

<sup>3</sup>Wiersbe, 1:557. See Newell, pp. 497-98, for a brief excursus on capital punishment.

that resistance is not only against God's ordering of society, but wasteful of time and energy."<sup>1</sup>

13:3 There are two possible ways to explain this verse, which, on the surface, seems very naive. Each of these interpretations will have very different results for those who hold them. The problem is that rulers sometimes are, perhaps often, "a cause of fear" for those who do right. Government authorities sometimes abuse their powers for selfish ends. If they do not abuse but serve the welfare of the people as they should, we have no reason to fear them and can submit to them fairly easily. But what if they are evil?

The first way some people have interpreted this verse is to assume that Paul was speaking only of the norm.<sup>2</sup> The normal situation would be a good government that punishes evil and rewards good. Obviously rebellion and revolution would be wrong in such a situation. However, those actions might not be wrong if the state ceased to serve its God-given function and began denying the rights and removing the liberties of its citizens.

Moderate advocates of this interpretation usually do not suggest that the church, as an institution, should lead a revolution. Most of them would say, however, that Christians as individuals could justifiably participate in a revolution against such a government. Christians should at least speak out against such abuses. We must be careful not to confuse submission with silence, because silence can express approval.

The second way of interpreting this verse is to take Paul's words at face value and trust in the reassuring truth expressed in 8:28. The Christian who takes this view would not participate in a revolution, although he might speak out against a government's evils. He should prepare himself to accept the consequences of his actions. Such was the position of some pastors in Nazi Germany during World War II, for example, who went to prison, not for revolting against the government, but

---

<sup>1</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9–16*, p. 762.

<sup>2</sup>See Sanday and Headlam, p. 367.

for speaking out against it. Another alternative might be to flee from the persecution of a hostile government (cf. Matt. 10:23). This is what the Huguenots, who fled from France to England, and the Puritans, who fled from England to America, did.

I tend to prefer the second option, mainly because I am uncomfortable assuming that Paul meant something that he did not state. I prefer to accept what he said at face value. In this case the rulers would not be a cause of fear for the Christian either way, whether the rulers were just or unjust. The Christian would be obedient to God by submitting in either case. The objection to this view is that evil governments do not "praise" those who oppose them. But in a sense they do. Perhaps Paul meant that when good people stand up against evil governments even the evil rulers respect those who oppose them.

The martyrdom of Christians by Nero, shortly after Paul wrote Romans, was an indirect praise of them for their fidelity to Christ. The evil government itself may not issue a certificate of commendation to the faithful Christian, but his or her submissive conduct can still result in his praise. Even if no other human being ever learned of a martyr's conduct, God would still know about it, and He would praise him or her.

13:4 God will use government, whether good or bad, in order to bring the submissive Christian what is "good" from His perspective (cf. 8:28). Christians who are not submissive should fear because government has received its power to punish evildoers from God.

"... Romans 13:4 does teach the right of government to take the life of a criminal, although in what cases is not specified."<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Ryrie, *Biblical Answers ...*, p. 31. See also pp. 28-31; and Anderson, ch. 7: "Capital Punishment."

"Capital punishment finds divine justification from this passage."<sup>1</sup>

13:5 There are two reasons that a Christian needs to be submissive to his or her government: One is that the government may punish him if he is not submissive. The other is that God may punish him. God's punishment may be during the Christian's lifetime or after that, at the judgment seat of Christ. In the latter case the punishment might involve the loss of some reward that the believer would otherwise have received had he or she been submissive. "Conscience" refers to the believer's knowledge of God's will and purposes.<sup>2</sup>

"The United States Government maintains a 'Conscience Fund' for people who want to pay their debts to the Government and yet remain anonymous. Some city governments have a similar fund. I read about a city that had investigated some tax frauds and announced that several citizens were going to be indicted. They did not release the names of the culprits. That week, a number of people visited the City Hall to 'straighten out their taxes'—and many of them were not on the indictment list. When conscience begins to work, we cannot live with ourselves until we have made things right."<sup>3</sup>

13:6 Our double duty—to government and to God—should also make the Christian submissive when the bill for his "taxes" comes due. Government workers are indirectly God's servants, and we should support God's servants (Luke 10:7). Individual rulers may be unworthy, but the institution of government is not. Governments cannot function without revenue. This is the third time that Paul referred to rulers as "servants of God" (twice in v. 4).

---

<sup>1</sup>Johnson, *Discovering Romans*, p. 210.

<sup>2</sup>Moo, p. 803.

<sup>3</sup>Wiersbe, 1:557.

13:7 Paul, like Jesus, commanded believers to "pay" (or "give back," Gr. *apodote*) to the government what they owe for the services that it provides (cf. Mark 12:14, 17). Paying taxes has always been repugnant to people, including Christians. Some Christians argue this way: Since the government uses my tax money for purposes that are contrary to God's will, I do not want to support evil by paying taxes.

But Jesus came out flatly in favor of paying taxes, and He led His disciples in doing so, even though the Roman government to which He paid them eventually crucified Him. Likewise Paul here urged Christians to pay taxes to whom taxes are due (e.g., income taxes, etc.). "Custom" may refer to indirect taxes (e.g., sales taxes, etc.).<sup>1</sup> Paul also commanded his readers to show "respect" for those in positions of civil authority—because of their office, if not because of their character and conduct. He called us to "honor" all who serve the public in civil service positions—because they too are God's servants being a part of the government (e.g., veterans, police officers, fire fighters, first responders, etc.).

"It is a striking fact that the discussion builds up to its climax on the subject of paying taxes. This is unlikely to be accidental, and these verses [vv. 6-7] should not be regarded as an anticlimax or simply another argument. Nowhere else does Paul include such instruction in any of his letters, and there must have been some reason for his doing so here. Those listening to his letter read out in Rome itself would know well enough what that reason was—the abuses, particularly of indirect taxation, which were causing increasing unrest in the capital at that very time."<sup>2</sup>

Peter practiced and taught submission to governmental rulers like Paul did (Acts 4:1-3; 12:3-5; 1 Pet. 2:13-17). Peter did disobey his rulers, but he willingly suffered the consequences for his disobedience. He only disobeyed the law under which

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, p. 805.

<sup>2</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9–16*, p. 772.



he lived as a citizen of Israel when it conflicted with the law under which he lived as a citizen of heaven (Acts 4:19-20; 5:29). In the Great Tribulation, believers must not give allegiance to the Beast who will rule over the whole earth, but they must remain loyal to Christ (Rev. 14:9-10). I believe that Paul's emphasis on submission, rather than obedience, allows room for civil disobedience when the civil government requires, but not permits, the Christian to disobey God (cf. Exod. 1:17-21). When the will of the people conflicts with the will of God, the Christian must choose to do the will of God (Acts 5:29).<sup>1</sup>

For example, the Christian's obligation to submit to a government that requires abortions would be different from his or her duty to one that only permits them. I believe a Christian should disobey a government when it requires him or her to practice abortion, but not if it only permits abortions (cf. Exod. 1:15-22). I do not believe a Christian should break the law in order to protest an ungodly practice that his or her government only permits. If he or she disagrees with a law, that Christian should pursue whatever options exist to change the law, short of breaking the law. I believe that those who choose to break the law simply to make a statement, even though they are willing to suffer the consequences (e.g., go to jail), violate New Testament teaching on this subject.

"... where a government was *not* serving God for the good of its citizens, any appeal to this passage as a way of maintaining their [the oppressed's] subservience would be a complete distortion and an abuse both of Paul's purpose and of its continuing scriptural significance."<sup>2</sup>

## **2. Conduct toward unbelievers 13:8-10**

Paul had previously glorified the importance of love among believers (12:9-10; cf. 1 Cor. 13). Now he urged this attitude toward all people, though

---

<sup>1</sup>See Charles C. Ryrie, "The Christian and Civil Disobedience," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 127:506 (April-June 1970):153-62; and Denny Burk, "Is Paul's Gospel Counterimperial? Evaluating the Prospects of the 'Fresh Perspective' for Evangelical Theology," *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 51:2 (June 2008):309-37.

<sup>2</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9–16*, p. 774.

unbelievers are primarily in view in this chapter. The connecting link in the argument is our obligations to the government (v. 7) and to our fellow citizens (v. 8; cf. Gal. 5:13-15).

13:8 The translation "Owe nothing to anyone" is misleading, because it contradicts Jesus' teaching to loan to those who want to borrow from us (Matt. 5:42; Luke 6:35; cf. Exod. 22:25; Ps. 37:26). He implied that borrowing is not always wrong. The New Testament does not forbid borrowing, but it does forbid the practice of charging exorbitant interest on loans and failing to pay debts (Matt. 25:27; Luke 19:23). There are two kinds of debts: those with the lender's consent, and those without his consent. It is the second type to which Paul apparently referred here. The NIV's "Let no debt remain outstanding" avoids the problem and gives the proper sense of the command.

"Christians are to leave no debts, no obligations to their fellowmen, undischarged."<sup>1</sup>

"... do not continue in anyone's debt, while you are able to pay it."<sup>2</sup>

Some Christians who have trouble controlling their indebtedness have found motivation for cutting up their credit cards in this verse, but Paul did not say that all borrowing is wrong. I believe that using a credit card is all right provided one pays it off appropriately rather than allowing debt to pile up.

Christians do have a debt that continues forever: "to love one another." This debt is our obligation to seek the welfare of our fellow human beings (cf. 8:4). The Mosaic Law required the same thing (Lev. 19:18, cf. Matt. 22:39), but it provided no internal power to love. In Christ, however, we have the indwelling Holy Spirit, who produces love within us as a fruit of His life (Gal. 5:22-23).

---

<sup>1</sup>Cranfield, 2:673. Cf. Barrett, p. 249.

<sup>2</sup>Henry, p. 1789.

"This [verse] is not a prohibition against a proper use of credit; it is an underscoring of a Christian's obligation to express divine love in all interpersonal relationships."<sup>1</sup>

13:9-10 Paul again appealed to the Mosaic Law to show that what he had written in verse 8 was in harmony with what God had commanded earlier. Whereas the Mosaic Law specified numerous situations in which the Israelites were to practice "love," the Law of Christ contains comparatively few. The simple principle is enough: "Love your neighbor as yourself." This is another excellent example of the essentially legal character of the Mosaic Law and the gracious character of Christ's teachings. Jesus Christ gave us a model to follow in loving (John 13:34). Love promotes obedience.

"The Christian, who belongs to the New Covenant people of God, is no longer 'under the [Mosaic] law,' the law for the Old Covenant people of God; he is under a 'new law,' 'the law of Christ' (see Gal. 6:2 and 1 Cor. 9:19-21). And central to this new law is a command that Christ himself took from the Mosaic law and made central to his new demand: the command to love our neighbors as ourselves (cf. Gal. 6:2 with 5:13-14)."<sup>2</sup>

"This verse is not a command to love ourselves. It is a recognition that we do love ourselves, and commands us to love others just as genuinely and sincerely."<sup>3</sup>

"What is commanded is that we are to have the same loving regard for others that we have instinctively for ourselves."<sup>4</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Witmer, "Romans," p. 491.

<sup>2</sup>Moo, pp. 816-17.

<sup>3</sup>*The Nelson ...*, p. 1905.

<sup>4</sup>Mounce, p. 246.

### 3. Conduct in view of our hope 13:11-14

Paul's thought moved from identifying responsibilities to urging their practice. What lies before us as Christians provides essential motivation for doing so.

"Four things we are here taught, as a Christian's directory for his day's work: when to awake, how to dress ourselves, how to walk, and what provision to make."<sup>1</sup>

13:11 "This" refers to the duties urged earlier, not only in this chapter but also in chapter 12. It is important that we follow God's will carefully because the final phase of our salvation will take place very soon (i.e., our glorification, cf. 1 Pet. 1:9). We must get ready to meet the Lord, after which we must give an account of our stewardship to Him (cf. 14:10; Phil. 3:20; 1 Thess. 5:6; 1 Cor. 15:34). It is possible believers to go through life lethargic and insensible with regard to what God has revealed, as though they are asleep. But such a condition is not wise in view of what lies ahead.

13:12 Here Paul was thinking similarly to the way he thought when he wrote 1 Thessalonians 5:1 through 11. "The night" represents our earthly life, plagued as it is with spiritual darkness and danger. When the Lord Jesus calls us to Himself at the Rapture, which "day is near," a new "day" will begin for us, in which we will walk and live in sinless "light." In view of this prospect we need to prepare for it by laying aside evil deeds ("deeds of darkness"), like a garment, and putting on deeds of holiness ("the armor of light"). Paul called these new clothes "armor" because we are still at war with sin and the forces of evil (cf. Eph. 6:11).

"Christ's return is the next event in God's plan; Paul knew it could take place at any time and sought to prepare Christians—both in his generation and in ours—for that 'blessed hope.'"<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Henry, p. 1789.

<sup>2</sup>Moo, p. 822.

- 13:13 Our behavior, and especially those things that Paul called on his readers to do in 13:1 through 10, should be distinctively Christian since we live among unbelievers. The practices that he urged us to avoid here were common in Corinth, where Paul was when he wrote this epistle. He observed them constantly. Intemperance often leads to sexual sin ("promiscuity and debauchery"), which frequently results in interpersonal conflicts ("strife and jealousy").<sup>1</sup>
- 13:14 In one sense every believer puts on Jesus Christ when he or she trusts Him as Savior (Gal. 3:27). However in another sense we "put on the Lord Jesus Christ" when we dedicate ourselves to Him as our Lord (12:1).<sup>2</sup> The first step in putting on the armor of light (v. 12) is committing ourselves to follow Jesus Christ wholeheartedly.

"A literary parallel to this use of 'put on' is quoted from Dionysius of Halicarnassus, *Roman Antiquities* 11.5, where 'to put on Tarquin' means to play the part of Tarquin."<sup>3</sup>

However dedicating is not the only thing that is necessary. There must also be a deliberate turning away from desires to indulge "the flesh" (cf. ch. 6; 2 Tim. 2:22; 1 Pet. 2:11).

"... we must continually renew that life with which we have been clothed (Eph. iv. 24; Col. iii. 12)."<sup>4</sup>

Chapter 13 deals with living in the world as a Christian. Paul counseled submission to human government and love for all people while we actively wait for our Lord to appear.

#### **D. CONDUCT WITHIN CHRISTIAN LIBERTY 14:1—15:13**

In 14:1 through 15:13 Paul gave special attention to the problem of knowing how to live in Christian freedom. This section of Romans deals with

---

<sup>1</sup>See López, "A Study ... Vice Lists."

<sup>2</sup>See Cranfield, 2:688-89.

<sup>3</sup>Bruce, p. 229.

<sup>4</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 379.

Christian conduct for which God does not specify exactly what to do in every situation (cf. 1 Cor. 8). In such cases, some Christians will do one thing and others another, both within God's will. How to handle these situations is the subject of this section.

Paul moved on to discuss a problem that arises as the dedicated Christian seeks to live within God's will in the body of Christ (12:3-21) and in the body politic (ch. 13). As Christians, the 613 specific commands of the Mosaic Law no longer govern our conduct (7:6; 10:4), but the principles that Jesus Christ and His apostles revealed do (cf. chs. 12—13). How then should we deal with conflicting applications of these principles? How should we conduct ourselves when our interpretation of God's will differs from that of another believer? Paul explained how believers can disagree on nonessentials and still maintain unity in the church.

"From speaking of those who were too lax in the indulgence of natural appetites [13:11-14], the subject passes mainly to those who are too scrupulous. The object is not to remove these scruples, but to show those who have them and those who have them not how to live in Christian peace."<sup>1</sup>

The command to accept one another (fellow believers) begins (14:1) and climaxes this section (15:7). Within this section of this epistle Paul also gave three other "one another" references (14:13, 19; 15:5).

"... the section evidences Paul's knowledge of circumstances in Rome itself, at least in broad terms, with tensions between those who saw themselves as part of an essentially Jewish movement and therefore obligated to observe the characteristic and distinctively Jewish customs, and those who shared Paul's understanding of the gospel which transcended Jewish particularity."<sup>2</sup>

### **1. The folly of judging one another 14:1-12**

The apostle dealt first with the importance of not judging one another. This was a particular temptation for those Christians who believed that they should refrain from some practices that they believed were displeasing to

---

<sup>1</sup>Stifler, p. 222.

<sup>2</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9—16*, p. 795.

God, but which other Christians felt were legitimate. When Paul wrote, the first group included Jewish Christians who, because of their background in Judaism, tended to perpetuate the practices commanded in the Mosaic Code. Some Jewish Christians do this today as well. In our day this group also includes Christians, both Jewish and Gentile, who for one reason or another do not believe that certain non-moral practices are proper for a believer, even though other Christians consider them permissible.

A non-moral practice is neither right nor wrong in itself. It does not involve sin or morality. Examples include food, drink, recreation, clothing, personal grooming, birth control, schooling, lifestyles, et al.—when no sin is involved. Some Christians who have black-and-white mentalities have difficulty recognizing the existence of non-moral activity; to them everything is either right or wrong. However, the Bible teaches that there are many activities that may be right but are unadvisable for any number of reasons. Also, there are actions that are right for some people but not right for others.

"This paragraph divides into three sections: vv. 1-3, 4-9, and 10-12. The divisions between the sections are marked with similar rhetorical questions, each using the second person singular: 'Who are you who is judging the servant of another?' (v. 4a); 'Why are you judging your brother?' (v. 10a). ... The first (vv. 1-3) and the third (vv. 10-12) state in almost identical language the main point of the paragraph: the 'strong' are not to 'despise' the 'weak'; the 'weak' are not to 'judge' the 'strong' (cf. vv. 3a and 10a). In the central section, vv. 4-9, Paul provides the theological foundation for these commands: every Christian is a servant of the Lord; and it is to that 'master,' and not to any other fellow servant, that the believer must answer."<sup>1</sup>

14:1 Paul spoke here to those who, like himself, understood the implications of Christian liberty. The other group, the "weak in faith," consisted of those whose faith was not strong enough to enable them to exercise the full liberty that they had in Christ. Paul may have coined the designations "weak" and

---

<sup>1</sup>Moo, pp. 834-35.

"strong," or these may have been terms with which his Roman readers were already familiar.

"The weakness in faith to which this chapter refers is not weakness in basic Christian faith but weakness in assurance that one's faith permits one to do certain things ..."<sup>1</sup>

In view of what Paul wrote about the "weak," they appear to have been mainly Jewish Christians who refrained from certain foods and observed certain days because they remained loyal to the teachings of the Mosaic Law. Peter at one time struggled with the extent of his liberty, and he developed from being weak to being strong in faith (Acts 10). However in the process of his growth he had a relapse (Gal. 2:11-12). The weak in faith have an overly sensitive conscience about doing things that are permissible for a Christian.

A sensitive conscience is a good thing, but it can sometimes lead a person to restrict his or her freedom unnecessarily. Paul urged the stronger Christian, who appreciated the extent of his freedom in Christ, to accept his weaker brother as an equal. Nevertheless he was not to accept him outwardly (not tolerate his behavior), and then condemn him inwardly (mentally), much less publicly, for his scruples.

"The liberty of the Christian assembly should be able to embrace divergent views and practices without a feeling that they must be resolved or that a common mind must be achieved on every point of disagreement."<sup>2</sup>

14:2 Paul offered a specific case of disagreement. He did not say why the weaker brother chose not to eat meat. This brother's reasons were immaterial to Paul. The point is that for some reason this Christian believed that he would please God more by not eating meat than by eating it. He was wrong. God has not forbidden Christians from eating any food (1 Tim. 4:3-4).

---

<sup>1</sup>Cranfield, 2:700.

<sup>2</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9—16*, p. 799.



Eating food is a non-moral matter. It is neither morally good nor morally bad. What we eat does not in itself affect our relationship with God. The contrast with life in Israel is again striking where, in order to please God, an Israelite had to abstain from certain foods. Under certain circumstances eating certain food could become a moral issue (cf. Acts 15:20; 1 Cor. 11:20-21), but in itself food is non-moral.

14:3 The person who eats meat should not view himself as superior, even though he is right that eating meat is a non-moral issue. Nor should he look down on his extremely sensitive fellow Christian, who does not feel free to eat certain kinds of meat, or any meat, with a condescending attitude. The weaker brother should not "judge" the more liberal Christian as being displeasing to God either, because "God has accepted him."

14:4 The weaker brother needs to remember to whom the stronger brother is responsible and leave his judgment to God. Paul assured the weaker brother that the stronger brother would "stand" approved by God because God approves his liberty. God's grace provides both the possibility and the power for standing approved by God ("the Lord is able to make him stand"). The first part of this verse sounds very much like 2:1 and 3, where Paul rebuked the self-satisfied Jew.

Fritz Ridenour suggested three practical things to do to show love to someone with whom we disagree: Be genuine, be accepting, and be understanding (which requires listening).<sup>1</sup>

14:5 Here is a second illustration. In this case the weaker brother does something ("values one day over another"), and the stronger one does not do it ("values every day the same"). This is the opposite of the situation that Paul pictured in the previous illustration ("One person has faith that he may eat all things, but the one who is weak eats only vegetables," v. 2). Again, the reason that the weaker brother observes the day is immaterial. The point is that he observes the day and regards one day above another. At the time Paul was writing, Sabbath and Jewish feast-day observances were matters of

---

<sup>1</sup>Fritz Ridenour, *How to Be a Christian Without Being Religious*, pp. 124-29.

disagreement among Christians. The Jewish believers tended to observe these because they were part of their Jewish heritage, but the Gentile believers did not. Today the idea that by observing a certain day we please God more than we would if we did not is quite common. Some Christians believe that we should behave differently on Sunday, during Lent, or on some other "religious" day (e.g., Good Friday, Easter, Christmas, etc.).

"The fundamental principle is that such things are in themselves indifferent, but that each person must be fully assured in his own conscience that he is doing right."<sup>1</sup>

Under grace, if a Christian wants to celebrate Christmas, for example, he is free to do so. Likewise if another Christian does not want to celebrate Christmas, he is equally free not to do so.

14:6 The most important thing is to seek to please the Lord in all that we do.<sup>2</sup> Christians will come to differing conclusions about what this means in practice, but their submission to Jesus Christ's Lordship is primary. Paul meant that one person does not eat meat and another does eat meat, but both give God thanks for whatever they do eat (v. 2; cf. 1 Tim. 4:4-5).

14:7-8 In verse 7 Paul did not mean that our behavior influences other people. Obviously it does. He meant that no Christian should live to please himself alone, but that all of us should live to please the Lord. The context makes this clear (vv. 6, 8). Actually, the dedicated Christian's desire to please the Lord will continue beyond the grave, so Paul could also say that we do not die for ourselves ("not one dies for himself"). Our whole existence, this side of the grave and the other, in life and in death ("whether we live or die"), should express our commitment to please the Lord (8:38-39; cf. Phil. 1:20; 2 Cor.

---

<sup>1</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 386.

<sup>2</sup>See Godet, p. 457.

5:9). James Denney believed, correctly I think, that this refers also to choosing the time or mode of our death:

"He [the Christian who lives to please the Lord] dies when the Lord will, as the Lord will [as opposed to when and how he pleases], and even by his death glorifies God."<sup>1</sup>

Death does not just mark a transition for the Christian from struggle to rest. Death (not only at the end of our life, but dying to our selfish desires) is also a doorway that leads to new, enlarged opportunities for service and worship (cf. Luke 19:11-27). Intimate relationship to the Lord is and continues to be of primary importance. God controls the events leading to our death as He does those governing our life.

14:9 Jesus Christ also lived, died, and lives again. Consequently He is "Lord" of both those who have died and those who are still alive. Paul's point was that He is the Judge and we are not.

14:10 Both the critical weaker brother and the scolding stronger brother are guilty of the same offense, namely, judging prematurely and without authority. Jesus Christ (v. 9) is the God (v. 10) who will "judge" (cf. John 5:22, 27). This then is another reference to the judgment seat (Gr. *bema*) of Christ (2 Cor. 5:10; cf. 1 Cor. 3:12-15; Eph. 6:8).<sup>2</sup>

"The remembrance that all Christians will have to stand before the judgment-seat of God is a powerful dissuasive from all sitting in judgment on one's fellows."<sup>3</sup>

14:11 Everyone will bow in judgment before the Son of God (Isa. 45:23; 49:13; cf. Phil. 2:10-11). Christians will do so at the judgment seat of Christ following the Rapture (Luke 14:14; 1 Thess. 4:13-17; 1 Cor. 4:5; 2 Tim. 4:8; Rev. 22:12). Old Testament saints will do so at the Second Coming (Isa. 26:19; Dan. 12:2). Unbelievers will do so at the great white throne

---

<sup>1</sup>Denney, 2:703.

<sup>2</sup>See Joe L. Wall, *Going for the Gold*.

<sup>3</sup>Cranfield, 2:709.

judgment at the end of the Millennium (Rev. 20:11-15). Of course, no one judged at the judgment seat of Christ will be an unbeliever. The Lord will judge believers for our faithfulness to our stewardship during our earthly lives. The judgment we receive will apparently determine our opportunity to serve Him in the future (Matt. 25:14-30; Luke 19:11-27).

14:12 In this summary statement Paul identified the personal responsibility that every Christian has, namely, to "give an account of himself" or herself "to God." We will not have to answer for our fellow Christians or anyone else, but we will have to account for our own deeds.

"We stand before God in the awful loneliness of our own souls; to God we can take nothing but the self and the character which in life we have been building up."<sup>1</sup>

In this pericope (vv. 1-12) the apostle stressed the folly of judging our fellow Christians who relate to non-moral practices differently from the way we do. There is a strong emphasis on recognizing Jesus' Lordship in our lives in these verses (cf. 12:1-2). The word "Lord" occurs seven times in verses 5 through 9.

## 2. The evil of offending one another 14:13-23

In the previous section of verses Paul addressed both the "weak" and the "strong" Christians, but he spoke mainly about the weaker brother's temptation to condemn the stronger believer. In this section he dealt more with the temptation that the stronger brother faces. Paul structured his argument in a chiasm.<sup>2</sup>

- A Warning about stumbling blocks (v. 13b)
- B Nothing is "unclean" in itself (v. 14a)
- C Warning about destroying one for whom Christ died (v. 15b)

---

<sup>1</sup>Barclay, p. 205.

<sup>2</sup>Moo, p. 850.

- C' Warning about tearing down the work of God (v. 20a)
- B' All things are "clean" in themselves (v. 20b)
- A' Warning about causing another believer to stumble (v. 21)
- 14:13 The Greek word translated "obstacle" (*proskomma*) refers to an object on a path against which someone strikes his foot and consequently stumbles or falls (cf. 1 Cor. 8:9). The stronger brother's liberty might retard the weaker brother's progress as he walks the Christian path. It might set him back temporarily or even do permanent damage to his overly sensitive conscience (cf. Matt. 18:6-7; Mark 9:42; Luke 17:1-2).
- Another Greek word, translated "stumbling block" (*skandalon*), describes a snare that was used to catch an animal or victim as it walked by (cf. Matt 16:23; 1 Cor. 8:13). The stronger brother's liberty might even constitute a temptation for the weaker brother to sin. It might tempt him to go beyond his stronger brother's behavior and cast off restraint in moral, as well as non-moral (Gr. *adiaphora*, indifferent), matters.
- "It was one thing for *God* to lay the stumbling stone of Christ in the path of his people (9:33). It is quite another for the self-consciously 'strong' (mainly Gentile) to do so."<sup>1</sup>
- "Here now is indeed a field for *judging!* and it is ourselves, not our brother, which we are to judge!"<sup>2</sup>
- 14:14 The Lord Jesus taught that the distinction between ceremonially clean and "unclean" food had come to an end (Mark 7:15-23). Nevertheless not all Christians had grasped this teaching (e.g., Acts 10:9-15). Many have still regarded the Jewish dietary laws as God's will for them. Is it any wonder that many Christians, even today, mistakenly think that the Mosaic Code constitutes their rule of life? Defilement springs from the mind, not material objects (cf. Matt. 12:34-35;

---

<sup>1</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9—16*, p. 830.

<sup>2</sup>Newell, p. 510.

15:18-19; Titus 1:15). "Nothing is unclean in itself" must be interpreted within its context: no kind of food is now ritually unclean in itself.

"Conscience alone is not an infallible guide as to the right or wrong of a thing in itself; but to act against one's conscience, even when it is misguided, is always wrong."<sup>1</sup>

"Our wills, in all their choices should follow the dictates of our understandings. This order is broken if the understanding (though misguided) tells us that such a thing is a sin, and yet we will do it. This is a *will* to do evil; there is the same corruption of the will in the doing of it as if really it were a sin."<sup>2</sup>

14:15 The words "hurt" and "destroy" describe two different stages. When one person sees another doing what his own conscience condemns, it grieves him or causes him pain. When he then proceeds to do what his conscience condemns, he commits sin and ultimately experiences moral destruction. That is, the end of such a practice, if not stopped, will be his moral destruction.

The apostle's point was this: If your behavior regarding non-moral things is creating spiritual problems for another Christian, your conduct is not loving (cf. 12:10). The welfare of a brother should obviously take precedence over our liberty to do something non-moral (cf. 1 Cor. 8:13). The stronger brother's conduct could destroy the weaker brother's walk with God temporarily, or even permanently. It would be terrible for a Christian to destroy someone "for whom Christ died."

14:16 The "good thing" refers to the liberty to eat meat or to do anything non-moral. People could legitimately speak of it as "evil" if it resulted in the fall of a brother.

---

<sup>1</sup>Vine, p. 200.

<sup>2</sup>Henry, p. 1792. Cf. Johnson, *Discovering Romans*, p. 220.

14:17 "The kingdom of God" here refers to the realm in which we live as Christians.

"[The 'kingdom of God' is] an echo of our Lord's teaching. The phrase is used normally in St. Paul of that Messianic kingdom which is to be the reward and goal of the Christian life ... Hence it comes to mean the principles or ideas on which that kingdom is founded, and which are already exhibited in this world (cf. I Cor. iv. 20)."<sup>1</sup>

Alva McClain believed that Paul was referring only to the future millennial kingdom here:

"The thought here fits a *future* Kingdom better than a present one. For surely in the present life no one can deny the importance of meat and drink; but so far as the Church is concerned in the future Kingdom, these things will be of no consequence. Therefore, since the Church is to reign in that Kingdom, its members should not judge or grieve one another in such matters here and now (cf. vss. 13-21)."<sup>2</sup>

The emphasis in this reference to the kingdom of God is on the authority of God over His own. The primary issues in the lives of dedicated Christians should not be external non-moral practices but the great spiritual qualities that "the Holy Spirit" seeks to produce in them. These qualities include right conduct, or "righteousness" (cf. 6:13, 16, 18), "peace" with God (cf. Phil. 4:7), and "joy" (cf. Gal. 5:22-23). Paul wanted his readers to keep their priorities correct.

14:18 Acceptance with God for Christians involves emphasizing these great kingdom graces, rather than whether or not we engage in some non-moral practice.

---

<sup>1</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 391. See also Robert L. Saucy, "The Presence of the Kingdom and the Life of the Church," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 145:577 (January-March 1988):42.

<sup>2</sup>Alva J. McClain, *The Greatness of the Kingdom*, p. 434. Cf. Denney, 2:705.

"Those are most pleasing to God that are best pleased with him."<sup>1</sup>

This emphasis also wins the approval of "other people" because they can recognize what is more and less important.

"Let us ask ourselves, Does *my* walk please God? Is it approved in the hearts of men?"<sup>2</sup>

14:19 "The things which make for peace" in the context refer to practices that do not cause others to stumble and attitudes that are not judgmental. Peace between the strong and the weak is in view primarily. Rather than tearing one another down, we should do things that build "one another" up (1 Cor. 10:23; 1 Thess. 5:11). For the strong this might mean foregoing some legitimate non-moral practice. For the weak it could mean refraining from verbal criticism and judgmental thinking.

"... Paul is really not as concerned about 'not being a stumbling block' as he is about 'becoming a stepping stone.'"<sup>3</sup>

14:20 Even though God permits the eating of all foods, for example, He does not sanction eating a food if a Christian causes spiritual problems for someone else ("causes offense") by eating it. This destroys the work that God is doing in building His church.

"While freedom is a right, it is not a guide for conduct. Love serves that purpose. Rights are to be laid aside in the interest of love."<sup>4</sup>

"Christian history, alas, shows numerous examples of people utterly earnest about nonessentials,

---

<sup>1</sup>Henry, p. 1792.

<sup>2</sup>Newell, pp. 513-14.

<sup>3</sup>Ridenour, p. 136.

<sup>4</sup>Mounce, pp. 257-58.



who have felt at liberty to break the unity of the Church for the sake of their particular fetish."<sup>1</sup>

14:21 It is interesting that the apostle mentioned drinking "wine," since that is one of the most problematic non-moral practices in American evangelicalism. Paul himself was willing to forego any particular food or drink in order to avoid causing spiritual growth problems for a brother or sister (1 Cor. 8:13; cf. Mark 9:42). Certainly we should be willing to do the same. People willingly alter their pace of walking while leading a small child by the hand so the child will not stumble. How much more should we be willing to alter our Christian walk for the benefit of a weaker brother or sister in Christ whom we are leading.

"... modern Christians who ... abstain from all alcoholic beverages do so not because they fear ritual contamination. Some abstain because they are leery of a product that has had such a sad history of 'enslaving' those who partake (see the principle of 1 Cor. 6:12b). Many others do not drink because they do not want to set a bad example for others who might not be able to handle alcohol. Abstinence on these grounds may be a laudable course of action; but it has little basis in Paul's argument in these chapters. For the 'weak' here are not those who cannot control their drinking. They are people who are not convinced that their faith in Christ allows them to do a particular thing. They are not 'weak' in respect to handling alcohol; they are 'weak' in respect to their faith (14:1). And Paul urges the 'strong' to abstain, not because their example might lead the 'weak' to drink to excess but because their example might lead the 'weak' to drink and so to violate their conscience (14:22-23)."<sup>2</sup>

14:22 Paul evidently wrote this verse primarily with the strong in view (cf. v. 23). He did not want his readers to force their

---

<sup>1</sup>Hunter, p. 121.

<sup>2</sup>Moo, p. 881.

convictions about non-moral practices on others. The strong believer can be "happy" in his private enjoyment of non-moral practices, because he knows that he is neither violating the will of God nor the conscience of a weak brother. Another inferior interpretation, I believe, is that Paul meant ...

"... blessed is he who never judges himself in what he values, who has learned never to trust his own judgment regarding any value but ever goes to God's Word for God's judgment and regards as valuable only what that judgment approves!"<sup>1</sup>

14:23 This verse, in contrast to verse 22, seems addressed particularly to the weak. The weak brother, who eats something that he believes he should not eat, stands condemned by his own conscience—and by God (cf. Gal. 2:11). His action is contrary to what he believes is right. "Faith" here, as in verses 1 and 22, does not refer to the teachings of Christianity but to what a person believes to be the will of God for him or her.<sup>2</sup> If a person does what he believes to be wrong (eats with doubts), even though it is not wrong in itself, it becomes sin for him. He has violated what he believes to be God's will, so his action has become an act of rebellion against God for him. Perhaps "the one who creates divisions" would be a better translation of *diakrinomenos* than "the one who doubts."<sup>3</sup>

"Whatever is done without the conviction that God has approved it is by definition sin. God has called us to a life of faith. Trust is the willingness to put all of life before God for his approval. Any doubt concerning an action automatically removes that action from the category of that which is acceptable."<sup>4</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Lenski, p. 852.

<sup>2</sup>See Cranfield, 2:729.

<sup>3</sup>David DeGraaf, "Some Doubts about Doubt: The New Testament Use of *Diakrino*," *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 48:8 (December 2005):733-55.

<sup>4</sup>Mounce, pp. 258-59. See also Calvin, *Institutes of ...*, 4:13:20.

"For a Christian not a single decision and action can be good which he does not think he can justify on the ground of his Christian conviction and his liberty before God in Christ."<sup>1</sup>

"Paul's words meant, then, that it is wrong to do anything we think is wrong, although it is not always right to do what we think is right."<sup>2</sup>

### **3. The importance of pleasing one another 15:1-6**

Paul now developed the key concept to which he referred in chapter 14, namely, putting the welfare of others before that of self (cf. Gal. 6:2). This is love. He cited the example of Christ, who lived free of taboos and unnecessary inhibitions, but was always careful to bear with the weaknesses of others.

15:1 The "strong" ought to take the initiative in resolving the tension between the strong and the weak. The strong need to be willing to limit their Christian liberty, if, by doing so, they can reduce the problems of their brethren. The weak need knowledge, and the strong need love. By "bear the weaknesses of those without strength" Paul was not saying that the strong must determine to put up with the weak. He meant: "Those of us who are strong must accept as our own burden the tender scruples of the weak" (REB).<sup>3</sup>

S. Lewis Johnson Jr. has given good advice based on what Paul wrote about the strong bearing the weaknesses of the weak:

"Strong believers should avoid confirming legalists in their weakness by continually yielding on the things that offend the legalists. It is the responsibility of weak believers to grow to strength, and that can hardly be done if the strong always yield without explanation. Then the life of

---

<sup>1</sup>H. Ridderbos, *Paul: An Outline of His Theology*, p. 291. See also Dunn, *Romans 9—16*, p. 835; McGee, 4:745.

<sup>2</sup>Johnson, *Discovering Romans*, p. 223.

<sup>3</sup>REB refers to *The Revised English Bible*. See also Vine, p. 205.

the body of believers becomes determined by the narrowest and the most prejudiced of its members. That would not be so bad, were it not also an inevitable result that the unbelieving world is led to conclude that the gospel itself depends on obedience to the scruples and inhibitions of the weak. The gospel issue, then is no longer the issue of Christ and his saving cross alone, but the cross plus obedience to the scruples. Salvation appears to unbelievers to be the product of faith and works, not of faith alone, dishonoring Christ's work and confusing the good news."<sup>1</sup>

How might one "avoid confirming legalists in their weakness," other than "yielding on the things that offend" him or her? The public teaching of the Word of God on this subject would be a good place to start. If the legalistic Christian fails to respond to public teaching on this subject, private confrontation might be effective. If he or she is belligerent and insists on promoting his or her views, some form of church discipline might be necessary.

15:2 All Christians, not just the strong, need to apply this principle of love. Paul was not saying that we should be people-pleasers and do whatever anyone wants us to do simply because it will "please" them (cf. Gal. 1:10, 19; Eph. 6:6; Col. 3:22; 1 Thess. 2:4). The goal of our behavior should be the other person's welfare and spiritual edification (cf. 1 Cor. 9:19-23). We should not please others rather than God, but we should please others rather than ourselves.

15:3 The apostle illustrated the commitment to doing the will of God, that he advocated with the example of "Christ." In Him we can see the difference between a people-pleaser and a people-lover. Sacrificing His own preferences for the welfare of others did not make Him acceptable to everyone, but it did make Him acceptable to His Father.

---

<sup>1</sup>Johnson, *Discovering Romans*, p. 224. Cf. Ray Stedman, *From Glory to Glory*, 2:156-57.

"Paul has no room for a piety which neglects the neighbor. Strength means not only accepting those who differ as brothers, but also a readiness to take responsibility (as Paul does here) for their right to hold these different views."<sup>1</sup>

David voiced the testimony that Paul quoted here regarding his zeal for God's house (Ps. 69:9). Christians need to show as strong a commitment to building up God's spiritual house as David displayed in promoting His physical house, even in the face of criticism by "his neighbor" (v. 3).

"Convictions about what constitutes Christian conduct sometimes reflect ecclesiastical and social backgrounds, but the principles written in this passage are timeless. They may be stated as follows: Christians (1) are not to judge the practice of other Christians in respect to doubtful things (v. 3); (2) are personally accountable to God for their actions (v. 12); (3) are not to do anything that will put a stumbling block before their brethren (v. 13); (4) have Christian liberty regarding what they do (vv. 14, 20); (5) are to do what will edify their brethren (v. 19); (6) should, for the sake of their weaker brethren, voluntarily abstain from certain practices (v. 21); (7) are to do only what can be done without self-condemnation (v. 22); and (8) are to follow the example of Christ, who did not live to please Himself (15:1-3)."<sup>2</sup>

McGee summarized Paul's principles of Christian conduct regarding doubtful things as: conviction, conscience, and consideration.<sup>3</sup>

15:4 Paul used his reference to David's experience as an occasion to comment on the usefulness of all Old Testament Scripture

---

<sup>1</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9—16*, p. 843.

<sup>2</sup>*The New Scofield ...*, p. 1228.

<sup>3</sup>See McGee, 4:741-47.

("whatever was written in earlier times").<sup>1</sup> It provides motivation for "perseverance" and gives "encouragement" as we seek to remain faithful in our commitment to do God's will. These "Scriptures" give us "hope" because in them we see God's approval of those who persevered faithfully in spite of opposition and frustration (cf. Heb. 11).

"Two points then St. Paul teaches, the permanent value of the great moral and spiritual truths of the O. T., and the witness of the O. T. to Christ."<sup>2</sup>

"In my opinion, the greatest sin in the church of Jesus Christ in this generation is ignorance of the Word of God. Many times I have heard a church officer say, 'Well, I don't know much about the Bible, but ...' and then he gives his opinion, which often actually contradicts the Word of God! Why doesn't he know much about the Bible? These things were written aforetime for our learning. God wants you to *know* His Word."<sup>3</sup>

15:5 "Perseverance and encouragement" come to us through the Scriptures, but they are gifts from God. Paul wished that all his readers, both the strong and the weak, would appropriate these gifts and apply them in their interpersonal relationships.<sup>4</sup> The result would be unity ("one accord") in the church.

"The centripetal [tending to move toward a center] magnetism of the Lord can effectively counter the centrifugal [tending to move away from a center] force of individual judgment and opinion."<sup>5</sup>

15:6 United vocal praise of God in the assembly would be an evidence of unity among the strong and the weak. Christians

---

<sup>1</sup>See George W. Knight, III, "The Scriptures Were Written for Our Instruction," *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 39:1 (March 1996):3-13.

<sup>2</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 396.

<sup>3</sup>McGee, 4:747.

<sup>4</sup>See Cranfield, 2:736, for helpful comments on Paul's prayerful wishes.

<sup>5</sup>Harrison, p. 153.

who do not love God and one another often have difficulty praising God together in church meetings. Unity in the local church enables its members to "glorify the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ."

"... Paul looks not merely for a tacit toleration of differences, but for a mutual acceptance which expresses itself in the common act of worship."<sup>1</sup>

"This suggests to us that the local church must major in the Word of God and prayer. The first real danger to the unity of the church came because the Apostles were too busy to minister God's Word and pray (Acts 6:1-7)."<sup>2</sup>

#### **4. The importance of accepting one another 15:7-13**

This section concludes Paul's instructions concerning the importance of accepting one another as Christians that he began in 14:1. In this section the apostle gave a charge to both the strong and the weak.

15:7 "Accept" repeats Paul's opening exhortation (14:1). "One another" encompasses the two groups: the strong and the weak. It is inconsistent for a Christian to reject someone whom "Christ" has "accepted." We are to accept one another as Jesus Christ has accepted us. We are fellow members of the family of God. Accepting one another glorifies "God."

15:8 Verses 8 through 10 expand the idea of Jesus Christ accepting us. Verse 8 deals with His acceptance of Jews ("the circumcision"). He not only accepted Jewish believers but came to serve the Jewish people, as the Old Testament predicted, fulfilling God's "promises" to the patriarchs (Mark 10:45; Matt. 15:24; cf. Gal. 3:16). Consequently, the typically stronger Gentile believers should not despise their occasionally weaker Jewish brethren.

---

<sup>1</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9—16*, p. 843.

<sup>2</sup>Wiersbe, 1:562.

Why did Paul refer to the Jews here as "the circumcision"? He may have regarded them as the most awkward and irritating of scrupulous persons.<sup>1</sup> Or he may have used this term because of its connection to "the promises given to the fathers" (cf. 11:16-24). This term also is a way of distinguishing the Jews from the Gentiles (v. 9).

15:9-10 These verses deal with Jesus Christ's acceptance of "Gentiles." The citations show that God always purposed to have mercy on the Gentiles. Therefore conservative Jewish believers should not despise their more liberal Gentile brethren. I use the adjectives "conservative" and "liberal" (cf. 14:3) to describe their relationship to non-moral matters. Four quotations from the Old Testament follow, which support Paul's assertions in verses 8 and 9a as a whole.

Psalm 18:49 pictures David rejoicing in God for his victories over the nations that had become subject to him. In Deuteronomy 32:43, Moses saw the Gentiles praising God with the Israelites. These passages would have encouraged Paul's Jewish readers to accept their Gentile brethren.

15:11-12 Two more quotations picture the Gentiles by themselves praising God—apart from participation with Israel (Ps. 117:1; Isa. 11:10). Perhaps Paul cited these references in order to help his Jewish readers remember that their Gentile brethren did not need to come to God through the Jews or Judaism. Nor did they need to practice some of the things that Jewish Christians did as a part of their cultural heritage.

"The four quotations are taken from all three parts of the Old Testament, the Law (v. 10), the Psalms (vv. 9, 11), and the Prophets (v. 12). Accordingly the truth of the inclusion of Jew and Gentile in Christ through the Gospel is shown to extend through the whole range of Old Testament

---

<sup>1</sup>Barrett, p. 271.



prophecy. This, adds point to the preceding exhortations as to mutual forbearance."<sup>1</sup>

15:13 This verse concludes the section of Romans that deals with the practice of God's righteousness (12:1—15:13). It is another pious wish that amounts to a prayer (cf. v. 5).

The mention of "hope" points forward to the future. Throughout this epistle Paul kept referring to the fact that God had not finished His saving work in his Christian readers' lives. They were still under construction. There was more to God's salvation than they had experienced so far. In closing his treatise on God's righteousness, the apostle focused his readers' attention on the rest of their sanctification and their final glorification.

"The God of hope" is the God who inspires hope in, and provides hope for, His redeemed ones. Christians can be filled "with all joy" because of what God has already done for us, and what He is still doing for us. We can also be filled with all "peace" as we realize both what He is doing for us now and what He will do for us in the future. It is possible for us to "abound in hope" because "the power of the" omnipotent "Holy Spirit" is at work in us (cf. ch. 8).

"The achievement of all God's purposes for the spiritual welfare of His children comes from the power given by the Spirit of God. What a fitting closing reminder to the apostle's discussion of Christian living."<sup>2</sup>

This concludes Paul's exposition of the theme of the righteousness of God that constitutes the heart of this epistle (1:18—15:13). Paul showed man's need of God's righteousness (1:18—3:20), how God imputes it to people who trust in His Son (3:21—5:21), and how He imparts it to those to whom He has imputed it (chs. 6—8). Moreover, he demonstrated that God is consistently righteous in doing all these things (chs. 9—11). He ended by urging his readers to practice their righteousness in their most

---

<sup>1</sup>Vine, p. 209.

<sup>2</sup>Witmer, "Romans," p. 496.

important relationships: with God, with the world, and with their fellow believers (12:1—15:13).

## VII. CONCLUSION 15:14—16:27

The conclusion of the epistle corresponds to its introduction (1:1-17; cf. 15:14 and 1:8; 15:15b-21 and 1:3, 13; 15:22 and 1:13a; 15:27 and 1:14; 15:29 and 1:11-12; and 15:30-32 and 1:9-10). Both sections deal with matters of personal interest to Paul, and they frame his exposition of the righteousness of God (cf. 1 Cor. 1:1-9; 16:5-24). However, in both sections what Paul wrote about himself related to the gospel of Jesus Christ.

### A. PAUL'S MINISTRY 15:14-33

The apostle first gave information concerning his past labors (15:14-21). Then he explained his present program (15:22-29). Finally, he shared his future plans (15:30-33).

#### 1. Past labors 15:14-21

Paul could be understood as having been somewhat critical of the strong and the weak in the Roman church (14:1—15:13). He now balanced those comments by pointing out other strengths in the church, besides the faith of his Roman brethren (1:8).

"Almost as though the whole sweep of the argument from 1:16 to 15:13 had been one long parenthesis, Paul returns to the theme and mood of 1:8-15."<sup>1</sup>

15:14 Paul's knowledge of the church in Rome had come to him through sources other than personal observation (vv. 22-24; cf. 1:8).

"Goodness" is moral excellence that comes through the working of God's Spirit (Gal. 5:22; cf. Rom. 6:13). Goodness is necessary to apply truth to life, as is "knowledge." This was primarily a self-taught church (6:17), and the believers were

---

<sup>1</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9—16*, p. 866.

"able to admonish one another." "Admonish" (or instruct) means to inculcate, to instill in, to implant in (cf. Col. 3:16; 1 Thess. 5:14).

"Morally, they were 'full of goodness,' intellectually they were 'complete in knowledge,' and functionally they were 'competent to instruct one another.'"<sup>1</sup>

- 15:15 The apostle gave his readers credit for some knowledge of what he had written in the foregoing chapters. Nevertheless, they needed reminding, as do all of God's people. This is the closest Paul got to explaining his purpose for writing Romans in this epistle, but this purpose statement is obviously very general.
- 15:16 Paul had a special obligation to this primarily Gentile congregation (1:13) because God had sent him to minister "to the Gentiles." As a believer-priest it was his duty to bring people to God with "the gospel of God." He regarded the Gentiles who were coming to faith and growing through his ministry as his "offering" to God.<sup>2</sup> These Gentiles would be "acceptable" to God as the Holy Spirit set them apart ("sanctified" them) to God as His possession (cf. 1 Cor. 6:11). Positional sanctification is in view here rather than progressive sanctification.
- 15:17-18 Paul had grounds to boast because Gentiles had come to Jesus Christ through his ministry. But he gave all the credit for what had happened to "Christ Jesus" who had worked through His servant to lead "the Gentiles" to obey God in "word and deed." "Obedience" in this context involved putting their trust in Christ (cf. 1:5; 16:26; Acts 17:30; 1 Pet. 1:2).
- 15:19 "Signs and wonders," standard biblical phraseology for miracles, accredited the messenger of God and validated the

---

<sup>1</sup>Mounce, p. 266.

<sup>2</sup>See William A. Simmons, "Priest—Sacrifice—Life as Worship: A Pauline Matrix for Understanding Romans," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 172:685 (January-March 2015):85-99.

message that he proclaimed (Acts 2:22; 5:12).<sup>1</sup> "The power of the Holy Spirit" enabled people to see the connection between the miracle and the message, and, therefore, to believe the gospel and experience salvation.

Paul's arena of ministry when he wrote this epistle stretched about 1,400 miles, "from Jerusalem" to the Roman province of "Illyricum."

"At this period *Illyrikon* [Illyricum] stretched down the northeast coast of the Adriatic (across from Italy), from somewhere near the top of the Adriatic Gulf, to Macedonia (coinciding roughly with modern Yugoslavia and Albania)."<sup>2</sup>

Now the former "Illyricum" includes northern Albania, much of former Yugoslavia, and Bosnia-Herzegovina. There is no record in Acts of Paul having gone there, though he may have done so on his second missionary journey (Acts 17:1-9) or during his third journey (Acts 21:1-2). Another possibility is that he meant that Illyricum was the next province beyond the one that he had evangelized: Macedonia.<sup>3</sup> Paul's claim to "have fully preached the gospel" means that he had faithfully proclaimed it, not that he had personally delivered it to every individual from Jerusalem to Illyricum.

---

<sup>1</sup>See Ken L. Sarles, "An Appraisal of the Signs and Wonders Movement," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 145:577 (January-March 1988):57-82.

<sup>2</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9—16*, p. 864.

<sup>3</sup>Alford, 2:2:462.



"Paul's vision then could be likened to lighting a series of candles at intervals in a curve round the northeastern quadrant of the Mediterranean; having lit them and ensured that the flame was steady, he left it to others to widen the pool of light while he went on to light more at further discrete centers of influence."<sup>1</sup>

15:20 This verse, along with verses 18 and 19, explains why Paul had not yet been able to visit Rome. His desire to do pioneer missionary work grew out of his zeal to reach as many unsaved people as possible (cf. 1:14). He went to unreached people ("not where Christ was already known by name") to preach the gospel (Matt. 28:19-20). He did not wait for them to come and inquire about it.

"The duty of an Apostle was with the foundation, not the superstructure. I Cor. iii. 10."<sup>2</sup>

15:21 Apparently Paul found encouragement to pursue his mission in this prophecy from Isaiah, which describes the mission of the Servant of the LORD (Isa. 52:15).

---

<sup>1</sup>Dunn, p. 869.

<sup>2</sup>Denney, 2:713-14.

## 2. Present program 15:22-29

Paul wanted the Roman Christians' help in two matters: First, he wanted their help in reaching another destination, namely, Spain (vv. 23-24). Second, he wanted their prayer support for his task of taking a collection to the poor saints in Jerusalem (vv. 25-29).

"The long discussion from 1:16—15:13 was preparing the way for these more detailed requests in two ways: on the one hand, it served as an indication of what Paul could contribute to them in the mutual sharing of their faith—the teaching embodied in the letter is in part exchange for the help he asks from them; and, on the other, it indicated the argument he would use to defend himself in Jerusalem, if called upon to do so, as he no doubt fully expected to be."<sup>1</sup>

15:22 This verse captures the point of what Paul explained in the preceding pericope: "For this reason [i.e., that Paul had committed himself to reaching the unreached, and the people living in Rome had been reached] I have often been prevented from coming to you."

15:23-24 The apostle felt that the Christians in the areas that he had evangelized were in a good position to carry on the propagation of the gospel in their territories ("no further place for me in these regions"). Consequently, he believed that he could look to comparatively unreached fields farther to the west in what is now Europe (cf. 1:11-12): "whenever I go to Spain."

"Parts of Spain (which in the ancient world included all the Iberian peninsula) had been occupied by Rome since about 200 B.C.; but it was only in Paul's lifetime that the Romans had fully organized the entire area."<sup>2</sup>

15:25-26 The purpose of Paul's collection of money ("a contribution") from the Macedonian and Achaean churches was to relieve the poverty that existed among the Jewish Christians "in

---

<sup>1</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9—16*, p. 884.

<sup>2</sup>Moo, p. 900. See also *The New Bible Dictionary*, s.v. "Spain," by A. F. Walls, p. 1209.

Jerusalem." A secondary purpose was to cement relations between Gentile and Jewish believers (cf. 1 Cor. 16:1-4; 2 Cor. 8—9).

15:27 The money that Paul was collecting was both a love-gift and an obligation. He could say that the givers owed it because the gospel, which they benefited from, had come from Jerusalem and Judea to the Gentiles (cf. 11:11, 17). Believers in Asia Minor also contributed to this fund (1 Cor. 16:1; Acts 20:4).

"In summary, the principle of verse 27 is that Gentile believers are indebted to Jewish believers, and they ought to pay their debt by sharing their material blessings with them."<sup>1</sup>

15:28 Paul evidently anticipated the completion of this project eagerly. The money given was "fruit" in that it was the product of gospel seed-sowing. Paul, as an apostle to Gentiles, evidently wanted the gift to serve as a token of the Gentile churches' love and gratitude to the Jerusalem church. Or, possibly, he wanted it to serve as a token of the "fruit" that God had produced among the Gentiles because of the Jerusalem church.<sup>2</sup>

15:29 "The blessing of Christ" in view was God's blessing on Paul by allowing him to reach Rome. The apostle probably also had in mind the blessing that would come to the Romans through his ministry among them. He did not know at this time that he would later arrive in Rome in chains (Acts 28:16).

### **3. Future plans 15:30-33**

15:30 Paul drew attention to the great need that he felt for his readers' prayers by using the same term ("urge") that he did when he appealed for them to dedicate themselves to God (12:1). He exhorted them on the basis of their relationship with their "Lord Jesus Christ" and their "love" that the Holy "Spirit" inspires. Paul realized that, in view of the spiritual

---

<sup>1</sup>Fruchtenbaum, *The Book ...*, p. 288.

<sup>2</sup>Cranfield, 2:775.

forces antagonistic to his ministry, energetic praying was necessary (cf. Eph. 6:18-20; 2 Cor. 1:10-11).

"... our praying must not be a casual experience that has no heart or earnestness. We should put as much fervor into our praying as a wrestler does into his wrestling!"<sup>1</sup>

"Prayer is never rendered superfluous by any circumstances, not even by the knowledge of God's will and purpose. On the contrary, the revelation of that will is an incentive to prayer. See Ezek. 36:37."<sup>2</sup>

"A Christian's intercession is a means of sharing in the ministry of others."<sup>3</sup>

15:31 Paul identified two immediate prayer requests: One was safety from the opposition of hostile unbelieving Jews (cf. Acts 9:29-30) and the distrust of Jewish Christians. The other was that the Jewish Christians would receive the monetary gift of their Gentile brethren. If they did not receive it, the unity of the saints would be in jeopardy.

15:32 The granting of these two requests would hopefully contribute to the realization of a third goal. This goal was Paul's joyful arrival in Rome in God's "will" (1:10) and his refreshment in the fellowship of the Roman Christians.

15:33 Even though Paul's life was full of turmoil because of his ministry, he wished the "peace" that comes from God as a special portion for all the Roman saints.

"St. Paul concludes his request for a prayer with a prayer of his own for them. 'Peace,' a keynote of the Epistle, is one of his last thoughts."<sup>4</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Wiersbe, 1:565.

<sup>2</sup>Vine, p. 214.

<sup>3</sup>Witmer, p. 498.

<sup>4</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 416.



"Far from being an afterthought that included only a few personal remarks, Romans 15:14-33 is key for understanding the Book of Romans and Paul's theology of missions. As such, it offers significant insights for a contemporary biblical theology of missions. The passage is a reminder, first, that all missionary efforts must be dependent on God and all results must be recognized as the work of God's grace. Second, the task of missions is a priestly privilege of presenting the nations to God. Third, missions must maintain a balance between the ultimate goal of establishing mature strategic congregations and not losing the urgency of evangelism among the unreached. Fourth, those who carry the gospel to the unreached among the nations are helping fulfill the purposes of God in salvation history. Fifth, reciprocal, mutual partnerships, so central to the task of missions, must emerge among churches around the world."<sup>1</sup>

#### **B. PERSONAL MATTERS CH. 16**

This last chapter is very letter-like in its spontaneous arrangement of material. Paul evidently related matters as they occurred to him. He named 36 persons in this chapter. Eight of these people were with Paul, and the rest were in Rome. He identified 27 men and eight women by name, plus two more by their relationship to someone else. In addition, he referred to at least two households (vv. 10-11) and three house-churches (vv. 5, 14, 15) plus some other unnamed men (v. 14) and two other women (vv. 13, 15). The households might also have been house-churches. Most of the names are Gentile, which reflects the mainly Gentile population of the church in Rome, and most are those of slaves and freedmen and freedwomen.<sup>2</sup>

Several commentators have believed that chapter 16 was originally a separate letter that Paul wrote to the church at Ephesus.<sup>3</sup> The hypothesis behind this view is that since Paul had not visited Rome he could not have known so many people, whom he greeted. He had ministered for three years

---

<sup>1</sup>Steve Strauss, "Missions Theology in Romans 15:14-33," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 160:640 (October-December 2003):474.

<sup>2</sup>See P. Lampe, "The Roman Christians in Romans 16," in *The Romans Debate*, pp. 227-29.

<sup>3</sup>E.g., Deissmann, *Paul*, p. 21.

in Ephesus and undoubtedly knew many people there. This view is highly improbable.<sup>1</sup>

"This sixteenth chapter is neglected by many to their own loss. It is by far the most extensive, intimate and particular of all the words of loving greeting in Paul's marvelous letters. No one can afford to miss this wonderful outpouring of the heart of our apostle toward the saints whom he so loved—which means all the real Church of God!"<sup>2</sup>

"... Paul's extensive request for greetings in Rom. 16 may reflect his desire to mention all the Christians in Rome he knows—a procedure plainly impossible in those letters directed to churches where he has ministered."<sup>3</sup>

"... Paul was a friend maker as well as a soul winner. He did not try to live an isolated life; he had friends in the Lord, and he appreciated them."<sup>4</sup>

### 1. A commendation 16:1-2

"Phoebe" (lit. "Bright" or "Radiant") was evidently the woman who carried this epistle from Corinth to Rome.

"The name itself was one of the names of the goddess, Diana, and this would suggest that she was a convert from heathenism, not a Jewess."<sup>5</sup>

She was "a servant" (Gr. *diakonon*) "of the church" in her hometown, "Cenchrea," which was the port of Corinth (Acts 18:18; 2 Cor. 1:1). It is unclear whether Phoebe held office as a deaconess, as some have assumed.<sup>6</sup> She may have been an informal servant of the church without office.<sup>7</sup> Paul stressed her service, not her office.

---

<sup>1</sup>See Bruce, pp. 253-57, for an effective rebuttal.

<sup>2</sup>Newell, p. 548.

<sup>3</sup>Moo, p. 917.

<sup>4</sup>Wiersbe, 1:565.

<sup>5</sup>Griffith Thomas, *St. Paul's Epistle ...*, p. 417.

<sup>6</sup>Lenski, p. 899; Moo, p. 914; Bruce, p. 252; Mickelsen, p. 1225; McGee, 4:755.

<sup>7</sup>Charles C. Ryrie, *The Place of Women in the Church*, p. 88.

"The word itself (*diakonos*) does appear to have been on the way to technical use by the time this epistle was written (xii. 7), but whether it was so used of women is not certain."<sup>1</sup>

The Greek word *prostatis*, "helper," occurs only here in the New Testament and probably means a helper in the sense of a benefactor or patron. Phoebe was Paul's "sister" in the Lord, as seems clear from his reference to her as "our" sister. Letters of commendation were common in Paul's day (cf. 2 Cor. 3:1). Paul's words here constituted such a letter for Phoebe.

Notice that the ministry of women in the Roman church is quite evident in this chapter. Paul referred to nine prominent women: Phoebe, Prisca, Mary, Tryphena, Thyphosa, Persis, Rufus' mother, Julia, and Nereus' sister.

## 2. Various greetings to Christians in Rome 16:3-16

It may seem unusual that Paul knew so many people by name in the church in Rome, since he had never visited it. However, travel in the Roman Empire was fairly easy during Paul's lifetime. Perhaps he had met some of these people elsewhere and knew others of them by reputation.

Most of the names are Latin or Greek, but some of these people were evidently Jews who, like Paul, also had Greek or Latin names (e.g., vv. 7, 11). In his epistles Paul greeted more individuals by name in the churches that he had not visited than in those that he had (cf. Col.). He may have wanted to establish a more personal contact with the congregations that had not seen his face.

16:3-5a Paul had met "Prisca" (Priscilla is the diminutive form of her name) and her husband "Aquila" in Corinth (Acts 18:2). They had "risked their own necks" (lives) for Paul. When he left for Ephesus he took them with him (Acts 18:18), but he left them in Ephesus when he moved on to Jerusalem (Acts 18:19). In Ephesus they helped Apollos (Acts 18:24-28). Later they returned to Rome where they had lived previously (Acts 18:2). Later still they returned to Ephesus (2 Tim. 4:19). Churches normally met in houses at that time, and one met in "their house" (cf. v. 23; 1 Cor. 16:19).

---

<sup>1</sup>Barrett, p. 282. Cf. Denney, 2:717-18.

"There is no decisive evidence until the third century of the existence of special buildings used for churches. The references seem all to be to places in private houses, sometimes very probably houses of a large size."<sup>1</sup>

16:5b-7 Most of the people mentioned in these verses require no explanatory comment. "Asia" (v. 5b) was the Roman province of Asia, of which Ephesus was the capital. "Junia" (or Junias, or Junianus, v. 7) was perhaps the wife of "Andronicus" (cf. vv. 3, 15), though this may not be a woman's name.<sup>2</sup> The term "kinfolk" (v. 7; cf. vv. 11, 21) seems to refer to relatives of Paul only in the sense of being fellow Jews (cf. 9:13; Phil. 1:7; 4:14).

"Fellow prisoners" (v. 7) may mean voluntary servants committed to the Lord, since Paul was not in prison. However, he had been in prison (2 Cor. 6:5; 11:23), so the imprisonment in view may have been literal. "Apostles" (v. 7) here must have the general meaning of representatives (traveling missionaries) rather than being a technical reference to one of the 13 official apostles (cf. Acts 14:4, 14; 2 Cor. 8:23; 1 Thess. 2:6; Phil. 2:25).

16:8-15 "Those who are of the household of Aristobulus" (v. 10) were probably his slaves (household servants). Since Paul did not greet Aristobulus himself here, this man may have been an unbeliever.

"Although Aristobulus was a common name (MM, BGD), there is certainly a strong plausibility in the suggestion that the Aristobulus here mentioned

---

<sup>1</sup>Sanday and Headlam, p. 420.

<sup>2</sup>See Esther Yue L. Ng, "Was Junia(s) in Rom 16:7 a Female Apostle? And So What?" *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 63:3 (September 2020):517-33; idem, "Did Joanna Become Junia?" *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 65:3 (September 2022):523-34.

was the grandson of Herod the Great and brother of Agrippa I."<sup>1</sup>

"Tryphena" (v. 12, "Dainty") "and Tryphosa" ("Delicate") may have been sisters. Both names derive from the verb *truphao*, meaning to live delicately or luxuriously (cf. James 5:5). "Rufus" (v. 13) may have been the son of Simon of Cyrene, who carried Jesus' cross (cf. Mark 15:21). Rufus' "mother" may have been Paul's ("and mine") only in the sense that she had at one time acted like a mother to him. It is unlikely that he would have referred to her as he did if she had been his physical mother.

"Let Christian mothers find here a great field for that wonderful heart of instinctive loving care given by God to mothers,—that they extend their maternal care beyond their own family circle, to all Christians, and especially to all laborers for Christ. The Lord will remember it at His coming!"<sup>2</sup>

"The brothers and sisters [or saints] with them" (vv. 14, 15) probably refers to the other Christians who met with those named in a house-church.

"Very probably ... Philologus and Julia, husband and wife, or brother and sister, were slaves in the emperor's household."<sup>3</sup>

16:16 The "holy kiss" was, and still is, a common affectionate greeting, expressing mutual love, forgiveness, and unity in Christ. Paul relayed the greetings of "all the churches of Christ" that he represented.

"The greeting thus has a 'political' overtone: Paul speaks for all these churches, and they are behind

---

<sup>1</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9—16*, p. 896. MM stands for J. H. Moulton and G. Milligan, *The Vocabulary of the Greek Testament*, and BGD is W. Bauer, *A Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament and Other Early Christian Literature*, English translation. See also J. B. Lightfoot, *St. Paul's Epistle to the Philippians*, p. 174.

<sup>2</sup>Newell, p. 554.

<sup>3</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9—16*, p. 898. Cf. Denney, 2:721.

him in his mission as articulated both in theological and political terms in the preceding chapters ..."<sup>1</sup>

Paul's acknowledgement of his co-workers (vv. 3, 9; cf. v. 7) shows that he was not a "lone ranger" minister. He had strong personal connections with several of the people whom he named. The significant number of women (nine) mentioned in these verses argues against the view of some that Paul was a woman-hater. Obviously women played important roles in the ministry of the early church, and Paul appreciated them.

### 3. A warning 16:17-20

Again, Paul introduced his comments with a strong exhortation (cf. 12:1; 15:30). He warned the Roman Christians about false teachers who might enter the fold of the faithful. The brevity of Paul's warning argues against concluding that false teachers were at that time active in the church.

"Paul at this point probably took the pen from his amanuensis (Tertius) and added a final personal note. This was certainly his regular style, and though he does not draw attention to the fact as he did when writing to the churches of his own mission, it would be evident enough from the change of writing style on the papyrus."<sup>2</sup>

16:17-18 False teachers were, and are, a danger to all the churches. Paul urged his Roman readers to avoid them.<sup>3</sup>

"If Paul had one particular group [of false teachers] in mind, we cannot be at all certain which it was. But he may well have had more than one group in mind, or he may have been warning in a quite general way against a danger which he knew would always threaten the churches but could present itself in many different forms."<sup>4</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9—16*, p. 899.

<sup>2</sup>Ibid., p. 906.

<sup>3</sup>See Ted G. Kitchens, "Perimeters of Corrective Church Discipline," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 148:590 (April-June 1991):205-7.

<sup>4</sup>Cranfield, 2:802.

16:19 Paul was confident that his readers could handle this threat, because they had a reputation for following the apostles' instructions. The "innocent" among God's people tend to accept false teachers, and the "wise" normally reject them. Paul wanted his readers to be wise concerning all "good", and "innocent" only with regard to evil (cf. Matt. 10:16; 2 Cor. 11:1-4, 13-15).

"... so wise as not to be *deceived*, and yet so simple as not to be deceivers."<sup>1</sup>

16:20 "Satan" is behind all evil ultimately, under God's sovereign plan. God desires "peace" among His people, not the antagonism that some in the church who chose to follow Satan's spokesmen would create. "Soon crush" does not imply that Jesus Christ would return soon necessarily. Paul meant that the Roman Christians would frustrate Satan's work among them soon, when they rejected the false teachers. His terminology suggests that he had Genesis 3:15 in mind.

Paul's benediction magnified God's "grace," as does this whole epistle. Usually such a benediction signaled the end of a Pauline letter, but the apostle had more to communicate in this instance.<sup>2</sup>

#### **4. Greetings from Paul's companions 16:21-24**

16:21-22 The men that Paul mentioned in verses 21 and 22 all seem to be fellow missionaries who were working with him in Corinth when he wrote this epistle. "Lucius" may have been Luke, the writer of Luke and Acts.<sup>3</sup> "Jason" may have been Paul's host in Thessalonica (cf. Acts 17:5-9). "Sosipater" was probably Sopater of Berea, who accompanied Paul when he left Greece toward the end of his third missionary journey (Acts 20:4).

---

<sup>1</sup>Henry, p. 1800.

<sup>2</sup>For a chart of Paul's benedictions in his epistles, see *The Bible Knowledge Commentary: New Testament*, p. 500.

<sup>3</sup>See John Wenham, "The Identification of Luke," *Evangelical Quarterly* 63:1 (1991):38-41.

"Tertius" was Paul's amanuensis (copyist/secretary, scribe) who wrote down this epistle for him.

"A crucial and debated question is the degree of freedom that a letter writer might give to his or her scribe in the choice of wording. A reasonable conclusion is that the freedom given to an amanuensis would have differed depending on the skill of the amanuensis and the nature of the relationship between the writer and the amanuensis. It may be, for instance, that when Paul used a close and trusted companion for his amanuensis, he gave that person some degree of freedom to choose the exact wording of the letter—always, we can assume, checking the letter over and attesting to its accurate representation of his thoughts with his closing greeting. Many scholars think that the influence of various amanuenses may explain the differences in Greek style among the Pauline letters, rendering it difficult, if not impossible, to draw conclusions about authorship based on such criteria."<sup>1</sup>

16:23 The men in verse 23 were evidently all Corinthian believers. Commenting on "Erastus, the city treasurer" Bruce wrote:

"He has been identified with the civic official of that name mentioned in a Latin inscription on a marble paving-block discovered at Corinth in 1929 by members of the American School at Athens: 'ERASTVS. PRO. AED. S. P. STRAVIT' ('Erastus, in return for his aedileship, laid this pavement at his own expense'). The aedile ('commissioner for public works') was a responsible magistrate in a Roman city. The office of *oikonomos*, perhaps 'clerk of works' rather than 'city treasurer', was a much humbler one (Lat. *arcarius*). Since the pavement seems to belong to a later part of the first century, it might be inferred that Erastus

---

<sup>1</sup>Carson and Moo, pp. 334-35.



acquitted himself so satisfactorily in the inferior office that he was promoted to the higher magistracy, and showed his appreciation of the honour thus done him by presenting the city with a marble pavement. He need not be identified with the Erastus of Acts 19:22 or 2 Timothy 4:20; the name was common enough."<sup>1</sup>

The name of "Quartus" "is stuck on at the end since, presumably, of those closest to Tertius at the time of writing, he was known to some of the Christians at Rome."<sup>2</sup>

16:24 Some later manuscripts have as verse 24: "The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen."

### 5. A doxology 16:25-27

The apostle brought together words and ideas from his earlier epistles, as well as from this one, in this doxology.

16:25-26 The apostle was confident that God could do for his readers what they needed (cf. 1:11; Eph. 3:20): "Him who is able to establish you." The "gospel" is God's chief tool to that end. "My gospel" identifies the one that Paul had preached widely and had expounded in this epistle. The "preaching of Jesus Christ" is another name for the gospel that stresses its subject: Jesus Christ. Proclamation ("preaching") followed "revelation" (Jesus presented and revealed to Israel, as the Messiah-Savior of the world).

The "mystery" refers in particular to those revelations that God had not given previously but had revealed to Paul and the other apostles and to the revelations that had been given previously but had not been completely understood (cf. 11:25; Gal. 1:12, 15-16; Eph. 3:9; Col. 1:26; 4:3). Even though the Old Testament prophets revealed the gospel (good news),

---

<sup>1</sup>Bruce, p. 266.

<sup>2</sup>Dunn, *Romans 9–16*, p. 911.

they did not always grasp all of its implications (1 Pet. 1:10-12; cf. Rom. 1:1-2).

"The commandment of the eternal God" in view is probably the expression of God's will. This new revelation and the understanding of previous revelation was now available "to all the nations," not just to the Jews.

16:27 As "the only" God, He is the God of both Jews and Gentiles (cf. 3:29-30). As the "wise God," He is the author of the plan of salvation for all humankind that Paul had expounded (cf. 11:33).

"What does the Bible mean when it calls God *wise*? In Scripture wisdom is a moral as well as an intellectual quality, more than mere intelligence or knowledge, just as it is more than mere cleverness or cunning. To be truly wise, in the Bible sense, one's intelligence and cleverness must be harnessed to a right end. Wisdom is the power to see, and the inclination to choose, the best and highest goal, together with the surest means of attaining it."<sup>1</sup>

God is worthy of all "glory," not only because of who He is, but because of all that He has done. Our access to Him is "through" His Son: "Jesus Christ."

This doxology is similar to the others in 8:31-39 and 11:33-36.

---

<sup>1</sup>J. I. Packer, *Knowing God*, p. 80.

## Appendix

### Sequence of Paul's Activities

Date	Event	Reference
	Birth in Tarsus	Acts 22:3
	Early life and theological education in Jerusalem under Gamaliel	Acts 22:3
34	Participation in Stephen's stoning outside Jerusalem	Acts 7:57—8:1
34	Leadership in the persecution of Christians in Jerusalem	Acts 9:1
34	Leadership in the persecution of Christians beyond Jerusalem to Damascus	Acts 9:2
34	Conversion on the road to Damascus	Acts 9:3-17
34	Baptism in Damascus	Acts 9:18
34	Preaching in Damascus	Acts 9:19-22
34	Trip to Arabia	Gal. 1:17
34	Return to Damascus	Gal. 1:17
37	Trip to Jerusalem	Acts 9:26; Gal. 1:18
37	Meeting with Peter and James and preaching in Jerusalem	Acts 9:27-29; Gal. 1:18-19
37	Trip to Tarsus via Caesarea	Acts 9:30; Gal. 1:21
37-43	Ministry in and around Tarsus	Acts 11:25

37-43	Caught up to the third heaven	2 Cor. 12:2-4
43	Move to Antioch of Syria on Barnabas' invitation	Acts 11:26
43	Ministry in Antioch of Syria	Acts 11:26
47	Trip to Jerusalem with Barnabas and Titus to deliver a famine relief gift	Acts 11:30; Gal. 2:1-10
47	Return to Antioch	Acts 12:25
47-48	Continued ministry in Antioch	Acts 13:1-3
48-49	First missionary journey with Barnabas and John Mark	Acts 13:4—14:27
48	Ministry in Cyprus	Acts 13:4-12
48	Voyage to Asia Minor	Acts 13:13
48	Separation from John Mark who departed at Perga	Acts 13:13
48	Ministry at Pisidian Antioch	Acts 13:14-52
48-49	Ministry at Iconium	Acts 14:1-5
49	Ministry at Lystra	Acts 14:8-19
49	Ministry at Derbe	Acts 14:20-23
49	Return to Attalia	Acts 14:24-25
49	Return to Syrian Antioch	Acts 14:26
49	Ministry in Syrian Antioch	Acts 14:27-15:2
49	Rebuke of Peter	Gal. 2:11-14

49	<b>Writing of Galatians</b>	
49	Trip to Jerusalem with Barnabas via Phoenicia and Samaria	Acts 15:3
49	Jerusalem Council	Acts 15:4-29
49	Return to Syrian Antioch with Barnabas, Silas, and Judas	Acts 15:22, 30
49	Separation from Silas and Judas who returned to Jerusalem	Acts 15:31-33
49-50	Ministry in Syrian Antioch	Acts 15:35
50	Division of opinion with Barnabas over John Mark	Acts 15:36-39
50	Separation from Barnabas and John Mark who returned to Cyprus	Acts 15:39
50-52	Second missionary journey with Silas and others	Acts 15:40—18:22
50	Ministry in Syria and Cilicia	Acts 15:41
50	Ministry in Derbe and Lystra	Acts 16:1a
50	Partnership with Timothy who joined Paul and Silas	Acts 16:1b-3
50	Ministry in other Galatian churches	Acts 16:4-6
50	Exclusion from Asia and Bithynia	Acts 16:7-8
50	Macedonian vision at Troas	Acts 16:9-10
50	Voyage from Troas to Samothrace to Neapolis with Luke	Acts 16:11
50	Ministry in Philippi	Acts 16:12-40

50	Separation from Luke who remained at Philippi	Cf. "we" in Acts 16:12 with "they" in Acts 17:1
50-51	Ministry in Thessalonica	Acts 17:1-9
51	Ministry in Berea	Acts 17:10-15
51	Separation from Silas and Timothy who remained in Berea	Acts 17:14
51	Ministry in Athens	Acts 17:16-34
51	Ministry in Corinth	Acts 18:1-17
51	Association with Aquilla and Priscilla	Acts 18:2-3
51	Reunion with Silas and Timothy	Acts 18:5
51	<b>Writing of 1 and 2 Thessalonians</b>	
52	Trip to Ephesus with Aquilla and Priscilla	Acts 18:18
52	Separation from Aquilla and Priscilla who proceeded to Syria	Acts 18:18-19
52	Ministry in Ephesus	Acts 18:19-21
52	Return to Syrian Antioch via Caesarea and Jerusalem	Acts 18:21-22
52-53	Layover in Syrian Antioch	Acts 18:23a
53-57	Third missionary journey	Acts 18:23b—21:19
53	Ministry in Galatia	Acts 18:23b; 19:1
53	Apollos' ministry in Ephesus	Acts 18:24

53	Aquila and Priscilla's ministry to Apollos	Acts 18:26
53	Apollos' ministry in Achaia	Acts 18:27-28
53-56	Ministry in Ephesus and Asia	Acts 19:1—20:1
53-56	Writing of the "former letter" to Corinth	1 Cor. 5:9
56	<b>Writing of 1 Corinthians</b>	
56	The "painful visit" to Corinth and return	2 Cor., 2:1; 12:14; 13:1-2
56	Writing of the "severe letter" to Corinth	2 Cor. 2:3-4; 7:8-12; 12:17-19
56	Sending of Timothy and Erastus to Macedonia	Acts 19:22
56	Trip to Troas from Ephesus	
56	Wait for Titus	
56	Trip to Macedonia from Troas	Acts 20:1
56	Reunion with Titus in Macedonia	
56	<b>Writing of 2 Corinthians</b>	
56	Ministry in Macedonia	Acts 20:2
56	Ministry in Greece (Achaia and Corinth)	Acts 20:2-3
56-57	<b>Writing of Romans</b>	
57	Return to Macedonia and Philippi with Sopater, Aristarchus, Secundus, Gaius, Timothy, Tychicus, Trophimus, and Luke	Acts 20:3-4

57	Trip of his companions except Luke to Troas	Acts 20:5
57	Trip to Troas with Luke	Acts 20:6
57	Ministry at Troas	Acts 20:7-12
57	Trip to Assos by land while Luke and another brother travel by ship	Acts 20:13
57	Trip to Miletus by ship with Luke and the other brother	Acts 20:14-16
57	Ministry at Miletus	Acts 20:17-38
57	Trip from Miletus to Caesarea with Luke and the other brother via Tyre	Acts 21:1-7
57	Ministry at Caesarea	Acts 21:8-14
57	Trip to Jerusalem	Acts 21:15-16
57	Ministry at Jerusalem	Acts 21:17— 23:30
57	Report to the church	Acts 21:17-26
57	Arrest in the temple	Acts 21:27-40
57	Speech in the temple courtyard	Acts 22:1-21
57	Imprisonment in Jerusalem	Acts 22:22— 23:30
57	Trip to Caesarea	Acts 23:31-35
57- 59	Ministry in Caesarea	Acts 24:1—26:32
57	Defense before Felix	Acts 24:1-27
59	Defense before Festus	Acts 25:1-12



59	Defense before Agrippa and Festus	Acts 26:1-32
59-60	Journey to Rome with Luke and Aristarchus	Acts 27:1—28:16
59	Trip to Crete	Acts 27:1-13
59	Shipwreck	Acts 27:14-44
59-60	Ministry on Malta	Acts 28:1-10
60	Trip from Malta to Rome	Acts 28:11-16
60-62	Ministry in Rome	Acts 28:16-31
60-62	<b>Writing of the Prison Epistles</b>	
62	Release from Rome	
62	Return to the Aegean area	
62-66	<b>Writing of 1 Timothy and Titus</b>	
67	Arrest	
67-68	Imprisonment in Rome	
67	<b>Writing of 2 Timothy</b>	
68	Martyrdom in Rome	

## Bibliography

Adeyemi, Femi. "Paul's 'Positive' Statements about the Mosaic Law." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 164:653 (January-March 2007):49-58.

Alford, Henry. *The Greek Testament*. 4 vols. New ed. Cambridge: Deighton, Bell, and Co., 1883, 1881, 1880, 1884.

Allen, Kenneth W. "Justification by Faith." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 135:538 (April-June 1978):109-16.

Allman, James E. "Gaining Perspective on the New Perspective on Paul." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 170:677 (January-March 2013):51-68.

Anderson, J. Kirby. *Moral Dilemmas: Biblical Perspectives on Contemporary Ethical Issues*. Swindoll Leadership Library series. Nashville: Word Publishing, 1998.

Archer, Gleason L., Jr. *Encyclopedia of Bible Difficulties*. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1982.

Auden, W. H. *For the Time Being*. London: Faber and Faber, 1958.

Bailey, Mark L., and Thomas L. Constable. *The New Testament Explorer*. Nashville: Word Publishing Co., 1999. Reprinted as *Nelson's New Testament Survey*. Nashville: Thomas Nelson Publishers, 1999.

Bainton, Roland H. *Here I Stand: A Life of Martin Luther*. Nashville: Abingdon Press, 1950. Reprint ed., New York: Mentor Books, 1955.

Baker, Bruce A. "Romans 1:18-21 and Presuppositional Apologetics." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 155:619 (July-September 1998):280-98.

Barclay, William. *The Letter to the Romans*. The Daily Study Bible series. 2nd ed. Edinburgh: Saint Andrew Press, 1963.

Barrett, C. K. *A Commentary on the Epistle to the Romans*. Harper's New Testament Commentaries series. New York: Harper & Row Publishers, 1957.

Battle, John A., Jr. "Paul's Use of the Old Testament in Romans 9:25-26." *Grace Theological Journal* 2 (1981):115-29.

- Bauer, W. *A Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament and Other Early Christian Literature*. English trans. Edited by W. F. Arndt and F. W. Gingrich. Second ed. Revised by F. W. Gingrich and F. W. Danker. Chicago: University of Chicago, 1979.
- Baxter, J. Sidlow. *Explore the Book*. 1960. One vol. ed. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1980.
- Baylis, Robert H. *Romans: a letter to non-conformists*. Downers Grove, Ill.: InterVarsity Press, 1972.
- Beasley-Murray, G. R. *Baptism in the New Testament*. Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1962.
- Berding, Kenneth. "Confusing Word and Concept in 'Spiritual Gifts': Have We Forgotten James Barr's Exhortations?" *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 43:1 (March 200):37-51.
- Berry, Donnie. "Groaning for Glory: Another Look at the Spirit's Intercession in Romans 8:26-27." *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 63:2 (June 2020):281-96.
- Blaiklock, E. M. *Today's Handbook of Bible Characters*. Minneapolis: Bethany House Publishers, 1979.
- Blauvelt, Livingston, Jr. "Does the Bible Teach Lordship Salvation?" *Bibliotheca Sacra* 143:569 (January-March 1986):37-45.
- Blue, J. Ronald. "Untold Billions: Are They Really Lost?" *Bibliotheca Sacra* 138:552 (October-December 1981):338-50.
- Blum, Edwin A. "The Apostles' View of Scripture." In *Inerrancy*, pp. 39-53. Edited by Norman L. Geisler. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1980.
- Bock, Darrell L. "The Reign of the Lord Christ." In *Dispensationalism, Israel and the Church: The Search for Definition*, pp. 37-67. Edited by Craig A. Blaising and Darrell L. Bock. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1992.
- Bock, Darrell L., and Mikel Del Rosario. "The Table Briefing: Does Israel Have a Future in God's Program?" *Bibliotheca Sacra* 172:685 (January-March 2015):100-107.

- \_\_\_\_\_. "The Table Briefing: Sexuality and Paul's Transcultural Message in Romans 1:18-32." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 172:686 (April-June 2015):222-28.
- Brindle, Wayne A. "'To the Jew First': Rhetoric, Strategy, History, or Theology?" *Bibliotheca Sacra* 159:634 (April-June 2002):221-33.
- Bruce, Frederick F. *The Letter of Paul to the Romans: An Introduction and Commentary*. Tyndale New Testament Commentary series. Revised ed. Leicester, England: InterVarsity Press, and Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1985.
- Burk, Denny. "Is Paul's Gospel Counterimperial? Evaluating the Prospects of the 'Fresh Perspective' for Evangelical Theology." *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 51:2 (June 2008):309-37.
- Burns, J. Lanier. "The Future of Ethnic Israel in Romans 11." In *Dispensationalism, Israel and the Church: The Search for Definition*, pp. 188-229. Edited by Craig A. Blasing and Darrell L. Bock. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1992.
- Calvin, John. *The Epistles of Paul the Apostle to the Romans and to the Thessalonians*. Translated by Ross Mackenzie. Edited by David W. Torrance and Thomas F. Torrance. Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1961.
- \_\_\_\_\_. *Institutes of the Christian Religion*. The Library of Christian Classics series, volumes 20 and 21. Edited by John T. McNeill. Translated by Ford Lewis Battles. Philadelphia: Westminster Press, 1960.
- Carson, Donald A., and Douglas J. Moo. *An Introduction to the New Testament*. 2<sup>nd</sup> ed. Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 2005.
- Chafer, Lewis Sperry. "The Consummating Scripture on Security." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 175:698 (April-June 2018):131-44. Reprinted from 1950 issue.
- \_\_\_\_\_. "For Whom Did Christ Die?" *Bibliotheca Sacra* 137:548 (October-December 1980):310-26. Reprinted from January 1948 issue.
- \_\_\_\_\_. *Grace*. 1922. Reprint ed. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, Academie Books, n. d.

- \_\_\_\_\_. *Salvation*. Philadelphia: Sunday School Times, 1926.
- \_\_\_\_\_. *Systematic Theology*. 8 vols. Dallas: Dallas Seminary Press, 1947-48.
- Chalmers, Thomas. *The Expulsive Power of a New Affection*. Edinburgh: Thomas Constable and Co., 1855; Minneapolis: Curiosmith, 2012.
- Coates, C. A. *An Outline of the Epistle to the Romans*. Kingston-on-Thames, England: Stow Hill Bible and Tract Depot, n. d.
- Cole, Sherwood A. "Biology, Homosexuality, and Moral Culpability." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 154:615 (July-September 1997):355-66.
- Cook, W. Robert. "Biblical Light on the Christian's Civil Responsibility." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 127:505 (January-March 1970):44-57.
- Constable, Thomas L. "The Doctrine of Prayer." Th.D. dissertation, Dallas Theological Seminary, 1969.
- \_\_\_\_\_. "The Gospel Message." In *Walvoord: A Tribute*, pp. 201-17. Edited by Donald K. Campbell. Chicago: Moody Press, 1982.
- \_\_\_\_\_. *Talking to God: What the Bible Teaches about Prayer*. Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1995; reprint ed., Eugene, Oreg.: Wipf & Stock Publishers, 2005.
- Conybeare, William John, and John Saul Howson. *The Life and Epistles of St. Paul*. London: n.p., 1851; New ed. Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1964.
- Cox, Dorian G. Coover. "The Hardening of Pharaoh's Heart in Its Literary and Cultural Contexts." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 163:651 (July-September 2006):292-311.
- Crain, C. *Readings on the Epistle to the Romans*. New York: Loizeaux Brothers, n. d.
- Cranfield, C. E. B. *A Critical and Exegetical Commentary on the Epistle to the Romans*. International Critical Commentary series. 2 vols. Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark, 1975, 1998.

- Crawford, Dan R., compiler. *Giving Ourselves to Prayer: An Acts 6:4 Primer for Ministry*. Terre Haute, Ind.: PrayerShop Publishing, 2005.
- Culver, Robert Duncan. "Apostles and the Apostolate in the New Testament." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 134:534 (April-June 1977):131-43.
- Culy, Martin M. "Romans 12:9-13: Greek Grammar and How to Worship God." *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 65:4 (December 2022):719-32.
- Daane, James. *The Freedom of God*. Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1973.
- Dalman, G. *The Words of Jesus*. Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark, 1909.
- Darby, John Nelson. *Synopsis of the Books of the Bible*. Revised ed. 5 vols. New York: Loizeaux Brothers Publishers, 1942.
- Daube, David. *The New Testament and Rabbinic Judaism*. London: Athlone Press, 1956.
- D'Aubigné, J. H. Merle. *The Story of the Reformation*. 2<sup>nd</sup> ed. Translated by John Gill. London: George Routledge and Sons; New York: E. P. Dutton and Co., n.d.
- Davies, Horton. *Varieties of English Preaching, 1900 - 1960*. London: SCM, 1963.
- Day, John N. "'Coals of Fire' in Romans 12:19-20." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 160:640 (October-December 2003):414-20.
- DeGraaf, David. "Some Doubts about Doubt: The New Testament Use of *Diakrino*." *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 48:8 (December 2005):733-55.
- Deissmann, Adolf. *Bible Studies*. Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark, 1901.
- \_\_\_\_\_. *Paul: A Study in Social and Religious History*. 2<sup>nd</sup> ed. Translated by William E. Wilson. New York: Harper & Row, 1957.
- Denney, James. "St. Paul's Epistle to the Romans." In *The Expositor's Greek Testament*. 2 (1912):555-725. 4<sup>th</sup> ed. Edited by W. Robertson Nicoll. London: 5 vols. Hodder and Stoughton, 1900-12.

- Dieter, Melvin E. "The Wesleyan Perspective." In *Five Views on Sanctification*, pp. 11-46. Counterpoints series. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1987.
- Dillow, Joseph C. *The Reign of the Servant Kings*. Miami Springs, Fla.: Schoettle Publishing Co., 1992.
- Dodd, C. H. *The Epistle of Paul to the Romans*. New York: Harper and Bros., 1932.
- Dunn, J. D. G. *Jesus and the Spirit*. London: SCM, 1975.
- \_\_\_\_\_. *Romans 1—8*. Word Biblical Commentary series. Dallas: Word, 1988.
- \_\_\_\_\_. *Romans 9—16*. Word Biblical Commentaries series. Dallas: Word, 1988.
- Dunnett, Walter M. *The Secret of Life, Victory and Service*. Moody Manna series. Chicago: Moody Bible Institute, 1961.
- Durant, Will and Ariel. *The Lessons of History*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1968.
- Eaton, Michael. *No Condemnation: A New Theology of Assurance*. Downers Grove, Ill.: InterVarsity Press, 1995.
- Edersheim, Alfred. *Sketches of Jewish Social Life in the Days of Christ*. Reprint ed. Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1974.
- Ehrman, Bart D. *A Brief Introduction to the New Testament*. New York and Oxford, U.K.: Oxford University Press, 2004.
- \_\_\_\_\_. *The New Testament: A Historical Introduction to the Early Christian Writings*. 3<sup>rd</sup> ed. New York and Oxford, U.K.: Oxford University Press, 2000, 2004.
- Elliot, Elisabeth. *Shadow of the Almighty: The Life & Testament of Jim Elliot*. New York: Harper & Brothers Publishers, 1958.
- English, E. Schuyler. "Was St. Peter Ever in Rome?" *Bibliotheca Sacra* 124:496 (October-December 1967):314-20.

Enns, Paul P. *The Moody Handbook of Theology*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1989.

Fee, Gordon. "The Genre of New Testament Literature and Biblical Hermeneutics." In *Interpreting the Word of God*, pp. 105-27. Edited by Samuel J. Schultz and Morris A. Inch. Chicago: Moody Press, 1976.

Finegan, Jack. *Light from the Ancient Past: The Archeological Background of Judaism and Christianity*. 2<sup>nd</sup> edition. Princeton University Press. London: Oxford University Press, 1959.

Fort, John. *God's Salvation*. New ed. revised. New York: Loizeaux Brothers, n.d.

Fruchtenbaum, Arnold G. *The Book of Romans: Exposition from a Messianic Jewish Perspective*. Ariel's Bible Commentary series. San Antonio: Ariel Ministries, 2022.

\_\_\_\_\_. "Israel and the Church." In *Issues in Dispensationalism*, pp. 113-30. Edited by Wesley R. Willis and John R. Master. Chicago: Moody Press, 1994.

Gaebelein, Arno C. *The Annotated Bible*. 4 vols. Reprint ed. Chicago: Moody Press, and New York: Loizeaux Brothers, 1970.

Geisler, Norman L. "A Premillennial View of Law and Government." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 142:567 (July-September 1985):250-66.

\_\_\_\_\_. "The Significance of Christ's Physical Resurrection." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 146:582 (April-June 1989):148-70.

*Genesis Rabbah: The Judaic Commentary to the Book of Genesis. A New American Translation*. 3 vols. Translated by Jacob Neusner. Atlanta: Scholars Press, 1985.

Gianoulis, George C. "Is Sonship in Romans 8:14-17 a Link with Romans 9?" *Bibliotheca Sacra* 166:661 (January-March 2009):70-83.

Glenny, W. Edward. "The Israel Imagery of 1 Peter 2." In *Dispensationalism, Israel and the Church: The Search for Definition*, pp. 156-87. Edited by Craig A. Blasing and Darrell L. Bock. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1992.



- \_\_\_\_\_. "The 'People of God' in Romans 9:25-26." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 152:605 (January-March 1995):42-59.
- Godet, Frederick L. *Commentary on the Epistle to the Romans*. Translated by A. Cusin. Revised and edited by Talbot W. Chambers. Classic Commentary Library series. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1956.
- Goswell, Gregory. "The Bookends of the Pauline Corpus." *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 65:1 (March 2022):111-26.
- Grant, F. W. *Spiritual Law in the Natural World*. New York: Loizeaux Brothers, Publishers, n.d.
- A Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament*. By C. G. Wilke. Revised by C. L. Wilibald Grimm. Translated, revised, and enlarged by Joseph Henry Thayer, 1889.
- Gromacki, Robert Glenn. *Salvation is Forever*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1973.
- Guthrie, Donald. *New Testament Introduction: The Pauline Epistles*. 2nd ed. reprinted. London: Tyndale Press, 1961, 1966.
- Hanna, Kenneth G. *From Gospels to Glory: Exploring the New Testament*. Bloomington, Ind.: CrossBooks, 2014.
- Hannah, John D. "The Doctrine of Original Sin in Postrevolutionary America." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 134:535 (July-September 1977):238-56.
- \_\_\_\_\_. "The Meaning of Saving Faith: Luther's Interpretation of Romans 3:28." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 140:560 (October-December 1983):322-34.
- Harless, Hal. "The Cessation of the Mosaic Covenant." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 160:639 (July-September 2003):349-66.
- Harrison, Everett F. "Romans." In *Romans-Galatians*. Vol. 10 of *The Expositor's Bible Commentary*. 12 vols. Edited by Frank E. Gaebelein and J. D. Douglas. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1976.
- Hart, John F. "Paul as Weak in Faith in Romans 7:7-25." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 170:679 (July-September 2013):317-43.

- \_\_\_\_\_. "Released From the Law for Sanctification: A Dispensational Perspective on Romans 7:6." In *Dispensationalism Tomorrow & Beyond*, pp. 397-417. Edited by Christopher Cone. Ft. Worth: Tyndale Seminary Press, 2008.
- Havner, Vance. *Vance Havner: Just a Preacher*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1981.
- Hendriksen, William. *New Testament Commentary: Exposition of the Pastoral Epistles*. Reprint ed. Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1968.
- Henry, Carl F. H. "Justification: A Doctrine in Crisis." *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 38:1 (March 1995):57-65.
- Henry, Matthew. *Commentary on the Whole Bible*. One volume ed. Edited by Leslie F. Church. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing Co., 1961.
- Hiebert, D. Edmond. "Presentation and Transformation: An Exposition of Romans 12:1-2." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 151:603 (July-September 1994):309-24.
- \_\_\_\_\_. "Romans 8:28-29 and the Assurance of the Believer." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 148:590 (April-June 1991):170-83.
- Hodges, Zane C. *Absolutely Free! A Biblical Reply to Lordship Salvation*. Dallas: Redencion Viva, and Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, Academie Books, 1989.
- \_\_\_\_\_. "The Death/Life Option." *Grace Evangelical Society News* 6:11 (November 1991):
- \_\_\_\_\_. *The Hungry Inherit*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1972.
- Hoekema, Anthony A. *The Bible and the Future*. Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1974.
- \_\_\_\_\_. "Response to Walvoord." In *Five Views on Sanctification*, pp. 230-32. Counterpoints series. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1987.
- The Holy Bible: Authorized King James Version*. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press, n.d.

*The Holy Bible: New International Version.* Colorado Springs, et al.: International Bible Society, 1984.

*The Holy Bible: Revised Standard Version.* New York: Thomas Nelson & Sons, 1952.

Hook, H. Phillip. "A Biblical Definition of Faith." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 121:482 (April-June 1964):133-40.

Hopkins, Evan H. *The Law of Liberty in the Spiritual Life.* Revised ed. Philadelphia: Sunday School Times, 1952.

Horton, Stanley M. "The Pentecostal Perspective." In *Five Views on Sanctification*, pp. 105-35. Counterpoints series. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1987.

House, H. Wayne. "The Future of National Israel." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 166:664 (October-December 2009):643-81.

Howard, James M. "Re-examining Roman 1—8 with the Pentateuch." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 177:705 (January-March 2020):70-90.

Howe, Frederic R. "A Review of *Birthright*, by David C. Needham." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 141:561 (January-March 1984):68-78.

Howell, Don N., Jr. "The Center of Pauline Theology." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 151:601 (January-March 1994):50-70.

Hunter, A. M. *The Epistle to the Romans.* Torch Bible Commentaries series. London: SCM, 1955.

Ironside, Harry A. *Sailing With Paul.* New York: Loizeaux Brothers, 1946.

James, David. "Romans." In *Surveying the Pauline Epistles*, pp. 13-49. Edited by Paul D. Weaver. [Schroon Lake, N.Y.]: Word of Life, 2017.

Jamieson, Robert; A. R. Fausset; and David Brown. *Commentary Practical and Explanatory on the Whole Bible.* Reprint ed. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1961.

Jeremias, Joachim. *The Central Message of the New Testament.* New York: Scribners, 1965.

*The Jerusalem Bible*. New York: Doubleday and Co., 1966. (Eccles. Jonah notes)

Johnson, John E. "The Old Testament Offices as Paradigm for Pastoral Identity." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 152:606 (April-June 1995):182-200.

Johnson, S. Lewis, Jr. "Behold the Lamb: The Gospel and Substitutionary Atonement." In *The Coming Evangelical Crisis*, pp. 119-38. Edited by John H. Armstrong. Chicago: Moody Press, 1996.

\_\_\_\_\_. *Discovering Romans: Spiritual Revival for the Soul*. Adapted by Mike Abendroth. Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 2014.

\_\_\_\_\_. "Evidence from Romans 9—11." In *A Case for Premillennialism: A New Consensus*, pp. 199-223. Edited by Donald K. Campbell and Jeffrey L. Townsend. Chicago: Moody Press, 1992.

\_\_\_\_\_. "G. C. Berkouwer and the Doctrine of Original Sin." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 132:528 (October-December 1975):316-26.

\_\_\_\_\_. "Studies in Romans." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 128:510 (April-June 1971):120-34; 512 (October-December 1971):327-40; 129:513 (January-March 1972):61-74; 514 (April-June 1972):124-33; 130:517 (January-March 1973):24-34; 518 (April-June 1973):151-63; 519 (July-September 1973):235-49; 520 (October-December 1973):329-37; 131:522 (April-June 1974):163-72.

Kasemann, Ernst. *Commentary on Romans*. Translated and edited by Geoffrey W. Bromiley. Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1980.

Kaye, B. *The Argument of Romans with Special Reference to Chapter 6*. Austin, Tex.: Scholars Press, 1979.

Kendall, R. T. *Once Saved Always Saved*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1983.

Ketcham, Robert T. *God's Provision for Normal Christian Living*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1960.

Kitchens, Ted G. "Perimeters of Corrective Church Discipline." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 148:590 (April-June 1991):201-13.

- Klein, W. W. "Paul's Use of *Kaleir*. A Proposal." *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 27 (1984):53-64.
- Knight, George W., III. "The Scriptures Were Written for Our Instruction." *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 39:1 (March 1996):3-13.
- Kreider, Glenn R. "Sinners in the Hands of a Gracious God." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 163:651 (July-September 2006):259-75.
- Kreider, Glenn R., and Thomas M. Mitchell. "Kindness and Repentance: Romans 2:4 and Ministry to People with Same-Sex Attraction." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 173:689 (January-March 2016):57-79.
- Ladd, George Eldon. *A Theology of the New Testament*. Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1974, 1979.
- Lamp, Jeffrey S. "Paul, the Law, Jews, and Gentiles: A Contextual and Exegetical Reading of Romans 2:12-16." *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 42:1 (March 1999):37-51.
- Lampe, P. "The Roman Christians in Romans 16." In *The Romans Debate*, pp. 216-230. Revised and expanded ed. Edited by Karl P. Donfried. Peabody, Mass.: Hendrickson Publishers, 1991.
- Laney, J. Carl. *God*. The Swindoll Leadership Library series. Nashville: Word Publishing, 1999.
- Lange, John Peter, ed. *Commentary on the Holy Scriptures*. 12 vols. Reprint ed. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1960. Vol. 10: *Romans-Corinthians*, by J. P. Lange, F. R. Fry, and C. F. Kling. Translated by J. F. Hurst, Daniel W. Poor, and Conway P. Wing.
- Latourette, Kenneth Scott. *A History of Christianity*. New York: Harper & Brothers Publishers, 1953.
- Lenski, Richard C. H. *The Interpretation of St. Paul's Epistle to the Romans*. Minneapolis: Augsburg Publishing House, 1961.
- Lewis, C. S. *Mere Christianity*. New York: Macmillan, 1958.

Li, Ping-Kuen Eric. "The Relationship of the Christian to the Law as Expressed in Romans 10:4." Th.M. thesis, Dallas Theological Seminary, 1991.

Liddon, Henry Parry. *Explanatory Analysis of St. Paul's Epistle to the Romans*. 4th ed. London: Longmans, Green and Co., 1899.

Lightfoot, J. B. *Notes on the Epistles of St. Paul*. Reprint ed. Winona Lake, Ind.: Alpha Publications, n. d.

\_\_\_\_\_. *St. Paul's Epistle to the Philippians*. London: Macmillan & Co., 1913. Reprint ed. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1953.

Longacre, Robert E., and Wallis, Wilber B. "Soteriology and Eschatology in Romans." *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 41:3 (September 1998):367-82.

López, René A. "Do Believers Experience the Wrath of God?" *Journal of the Grace Evangelical Society* 15:29 (Autumn 2002):45-66.

\_\_\_\_\_. "The First [*sic*] Epistle of Paul the Apostle to the Romans." In *The Grace New Testament Commentary*, 2:621-707. Edited by Robert N. Wilkin. 2 vols. Denton, Tex.: Grace Evangelical Society, 2010.

\_\_\_\_\_. "A Study of Pauline Passages on Inheriting the Kingdom." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 168:672 (October-December 2011):443-59.

\_\_\_\_\_. "A Study of Pauline Passages with Vice Lists." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 168:671 (July-September 2011):301-16.

Lowe, Chuck. "'There Is No Condemnation' (Romans 8:1): But Why Not?" *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 42:2 (June 1999):231-50.

Lowery, David K. "Christ, the End of the Law in Romans 10:4." In *Dispensationalism, Israel and the Church: The Search for Definition*, pp. 230-47. Edited by Craig A. Blasing and Darrell L. Bock. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1992.

\_\_\_\_\_. "A Theology of Paul's Missionary Epistles." In *A Biblical Theology of the New Testament*, pp. 243-97. Edited by Roy B. Zuck. Chicago: Moody Press, 1994.

- Lyall, Francis. "Roman Law in the Writings of Paul—Adoption." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 88 (December 1969):458-66.
- Lybrand, Fred R., Jr. *Heavenly Citizenship: The Spiritual Alternative to Power Politics*. Destiny Image: Shippensburg, Penn., 1993.
- MacArthur, John F., Jr. *Faith Works: The Gospel According to the Apostles*. Dallas: Word Publishing, 1993.
- MacDonald, William. *The Epistle to the Romans*. Oak Park, Ill.: Emmaus Bible School, 1953.
- MaGee, Gregory S. "Paul's Gospel, the Law, and God's Universal Reign in Romans 3:31." *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 57:2 (June 2014):341-50.
- Malick, David E. "The Condemnation of Homosexuality in Romans 1:26-27." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 150:599 (July-September 1993):327-40.
- Mann, Ronald E. "False and True Worship in Romans 1:18-25." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 157:625 (January-March 2000):26-34.
- Marshall, I. Howard. "Living in the 'Flesh'." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 159:636 (October-December 2002):387-403.
- Mathewson, Mark D. "Moral Intuitionism and the Law Inscribed on Our Hearts." *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 42:4 (December 1999):629-43.
- Matzat, Don. *Christ-Esteem*. Eugene, Oreg.: Harvest House Publishers, 1990.
- Maurier, Henri. *The Other Covenant*. New York: Newman Press, 1968.
- McBeth, J. P. *Exegetical and Practical Commentary on the Epistle to the Romans*. New York: Fleming H. Revell Co., 1937.
- McClain, Alva J. *The Greatness of the Kingdom, An Inductive Study of the Kingdom of God*. Winona Lake, Ind.: BMH Books, 1959; Chicago: Moody Press, 1968.
- \_\_\_\_\_. *Romans: The Gospel of God's Grace*. Reprint ed. Chicago: Moody Press, 1973.

- McFadden, Kevin W. "The Fulfillment of the Law's *Dikaioma*: Another Look at Romans 8:1-4." *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 52:3 (September 2009):483-97.
- McGee, J. Vernon. *Reasoning through Romans*. 2 vols. Los Angeles: Church of the Open Door, n. d.
- \_\_\_\_\_. *Thru the Bible with J. Vernon McGee*. 5 vols. Pasadena, Calif.: Thru The Bible Radio; and Nashville: Thomas Nelson, Inc., 1983.
- McNeile, Alan Hugh. *An Introduction to the Study of the New Testament*. 2<sup>nd</sup> ed. revised by C. S. C. Williams. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1927, 1953.
- McQuilkin, J. Robertson. "The Keswick Perspective." In *Five Views on Sanctification*, pp. 151-83. Counterpoints series. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1987.
- Merkle, Ben L. "Romans 11 and the Future of Ethnic Israel." *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 43:4 (December 2000):709-21.
- Mickelsen, A. Berkeley. "The Epistle to the Romans." In *The Wycliffe Bible Commentary*, pp. 1179-1226. Edited by Charles F. Pfeiffer and Everett F. Harrison. Chicago: Moody Press, 1962.
- Midrash Rabbah. *Genesis*. 3<sup>rd</sup> edition. 2 vols. Translated by H. Freedman. London and New York: Soncino Press, 1983.
- Midrash Rabbah. *Exodus*. 3<sup>rd</sup> edition. Translated by S. R. Lehrman. London and New York, Soncino Press, 1983.
- Mitchell, Curtis C. "The Holy Spirit's Intercessory Ministry." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 139:555 (July-September 1982):230-42.
- Moo, Douglas J. *The Epistle to the Romans*. New International Commentary on the New Testament series. Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1996.
- \_\_\_\_\_. *Romans 1—8*. Wycliffe Exegetical Commentary series. Chicago: Moody Press, 1991.
- Moody, Will. R. *The Life of Dwight L. Moody*. London: Morgan and Scott, n.d.



Morgan, G. Campbell. *An Exposition of the Whole Bible*. Westwood, N.J.: Fleming H. Revell, 1959.

\_\_\_\_\_. *Living Messages of the Books of the Bible*. 2 vols. New York: Fleming H. Revell Co., 1912.

\_\_\_\_\_. *The Unfolding Message of the Bible*. Westwood, N.J.: Fleming H. Revell Co., 1961.

Morris, Leon. *The Epistle to the Romans*. Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1988.

Moulton, J. H., and G. Milligan. *The Vocabulary of the Greek Testament*. London: Hodder, 1930.

Mounce, Robert H. *Romans*. The New American Commentary series. Nashville: Broadman & Holman Publishers, 1995.

Munck, Johannes. *Paul and the Salvation of Mankind*. Translated by Frank Clarke. Richmond: John Knox Press, 1959.

Murray, John. *The Epistle to the Romans*. New International Commentary on the New Testament series. 2 vols. in 1. Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1968.

Nee, Watchman. *The Normal Christian Life*. Second British ed. London: Witness and Testimony Publishers, 1958.

Needham, David C. *Birthright*. Portland: Multnomah Press, 1979.

*The Nelson Study Bible*. Edited by Earl D. Radmacher. Nashville: Thomas Nelson Publishers, 1997.

*The NET (New English Translation) Bible*. First beta printing. Spokane, Wash.: Biblical Studies Press, 2001.

*The New American Standard Bible*. La Habra, Cal.: The Lockman Foundation, 2020.

*The New English Bible with the Apocrypha*. N.c.: Oxford University Press and Cambridge University Press. 1970.

*The New Bible Dictionary*. Edited by J. D. Douglas. 1962 ed. S.v. "Spain," by A. F. Walls, p. 1209.

*The New Scofield Reference Bible*. Edited by E. Schuyler English, et al. New York: Oxford University Press, 1967.

Newell, William R. *Romans Verse by Verse*. 1938. Chicago: Moody Press, 1970.

Ng, Esther Yue L. "Did Joanna Become Junia? *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 65:3 (September 2022):523-34.

\_\_\_\_\_. "Was Junia(s) in Rom 16:7 a Female Apostle? And So What?" *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 63:3 (September 2020):517-33.

Nygren, Anders. *Commentary on Romans*. Eng. trans. of *Pauli Brev till Romarna*, 1944. London: SCM, 1952.

Ortlund, Dane. "Inaugurated Glorification: Revisiting Romans 8:30." *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 57:1 (2014):111-33.

Ott, Ludwig. *Fundamentals of Catholic Dogma*. 6<sup>th</sup> ed. Translated by Patrick Lynch. Edited by James Canon Bastible. St. Louis: B. Herder Book Co., 1964.

Packer, J. I. *Knowing God*. 9th American printing. Downers Grove, Ill.: InterVarsity Press, 1973, 1976.

\_\_\_\_\_. "The Way of Salvation." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 129:515 (July-September 1972):195-205; 516 (October-December 1972):291-306; 130:517 (January-March 1973):3-11; 518 (April-June 1973):110-16.

Pass, William N. W., III. "A Reexamination of Calvin's Approach to Romans 8:17." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 170:677 (January-March 2013):69-81.

Pentecost, J. Dwight. *Pattern for Maturity*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1966.

\_\_\_\_\_. "The Purpose of the Law." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 128:511 (July-September 1971):227-33.

\_\_\_\_\_. *Things to Come*. Findlay, Ohio: Dunham Publishing Co., 1958.

\_\_\_\_\_. *Thy Kingdom Come*. Wheaton, Ill.: Scripture Press Publications, Victor Books, 1990.

Peterson, Eugene H. *The Message: The New Testament in Contemporary English*. Colorado Springs: NavPress, 1993.

Pfeiffer, Robert H. *History of New Testament Times With an Introduction to the Apocrypha*. London: Adam and Charles Black, 1949, 1963.

Phillips, J. B. *The New Testament in Modern English*. New York: Macmillan Co., 1958.

\_\_\_\_\_. *Your God Is Too Small*. New York: The Macmillan Co., 1952.

Pierce, C. A. *Conscience in the New Testament*. London: SCM Press, 1955.

Piper, John. *"Love Your Enemies": Jesus' Love Command in the Synoptic Gospels and in the Early Christian Paraenesis*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1979.

Price, J. Randall. "Prophetic Postponement in Daniel 9 and Other Texts." In *Issues in Dispensationalism*, pp. 133-65. Edited by Wesley R. Willis and John R. Master. Chicago: Moody Press, 1994.

Pyne, Robert A. "Antinomianism and Dispensationalism." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 153:610 (April-June 1996):141-54.

\_\_\_\_\_. "Dependence and Duty: The Spiritual Life in Galatians 5 and Romans 6." In *Integrity of Heart, Skillfulness of Hands*, pp. 144-56. Edited by Charles H. Dyer and Roy B. Zuck. Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1994.

\_\_\_\_\_. "The Role of the Holy Spirit in Conversion." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 150:598 (April-June 1993):203-18.

\_\_\_\_\_. "The 'Seed,' the Spirit, and the Blessing of Abraham." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 152:606 (April-June 1995):211-22.

Radmacher, Earl D. "First Response to 'Faith According to the Apostle James' by John F. MacArthur, Jr." *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 33:1 (March 1990):35-41.

- \_\_\_\_\_. *Salvation*. Swindoll Leadership Library series. Nashville: Word Publishing, 2000.
- Ramm, Bernard. *The Witness of the Spirit*. Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1959.
- Ramsay, William M. *St. Paul the Traveller [sic] and the Roman Citizen*. Reprint ed. Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1960.
- Reid, Marty L. "A Consideration of the Function of Rom 1:8-15 in Light of Greco-Roman Rhetoric." *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 38:2 (June 1995):181-91.
- The Revised English Bible*. Oxford and Cambridge, U.K.: Oxford University Press and Cambridge University Press, 1989. (1 Kings notes)
- Richard, Ramesh P. "Soteriological Inclusivism and Dispensationalism." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 151:601 (January-March 1994):85-108.
- Richardson, Alan. *An Introduction to the Theology of the New Testament*. New York: Harper & Row, 1958.
- Ridderbos, H. *Paul: An Outline of His Theology*. Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1974.
- Ridenour, Fritz. *How to Be a Christian Without Being Religious*. Glendale, Calif.: Gospel Light Publications, Regal Books, 1967.
- Robertson, Archibald Thomas. *Word Pictures in the New Testament*. 6 vols. Nashville: Broadman Press, 1931.
- Rogers, Cleon L., Jr. "The Davidic Covenant in Acts-Revelation." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 151:601 (January-March 1994):71-84.
- Russell, Walter B., III. "An Alternative Suggestion for the Purpose of Romans." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 145:578 (April-June 1988):174-84.
- \_\_\_\_\_. "Insights from Postmodernism's Emphasis on Interpretive Communities in the Interpretation of Romans 7." *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 37:4 (December 1994):511-27.
- Ryrie, Charles Caldwell. *Balancing the Christian Life*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1969.

- \_\_\_\_\_. *Basic Theology*. Wheaton, Ill.: Scripture Press Publications, Victor Books, 1986.
- \_\_\_\_\_. *Biblical Answers to Tough Questions*. Previously published as *Biblical Answers to Contemporary Issues*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1974, 1991. Ft. Worth: Tyndale Seminary Press, 2008.
- \_\_\_\_\_. *Biblical Theology of the New Testament*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1959.
- \_\_\_\_\_. "The Christian and Civil Disobedience." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 127:506 (April-June 1970):153-62.
- \_\_\_\_\_. "Contrasting Views on Sanctification." In *Walvoord: A Tribute*, pp. 189-200. Edited by Donald K. Campbell. Chicago: Moody Press, 1982.
- \_\_\_\_\_. "The End of the Law." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 124:495 (July-September 1967):239-47.
- \_\_\_\_\_. *The Grace of God*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1963.
- \_\_\_\_\_. *The Place of Women in the Church*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1958, 1968.
- \_\_\_\_\_. *So Great Salvation*. Wheaton, Ill.: Scripture Press Publications, Victor Books, 1989.
- \_\_\_\_\_. *What You Should Know about Social Responsibility*. Current Christian Issues series. Chicago: Moody Press, 1982.
- \_\_\_\_\_. *You Mean the Bible Teaches That ...* Chicago: Moody Press, 1974.
- Sanday, William, and Arthur C. Headlam. *A Critical and Exegetical Commentary on the Epistle to the Romans*. International Critical Commentary series. 5th ed. Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark, 1902.
- Sarles, Ken. L. "An Appraisal of the Signs and Wonders Movement." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 145:577 (January-March 1988):57-82.
- Saucy, Robert L. *The Case for Progressive Dispensationalism*. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1993.

\_\_\_\_\_. "The Presence of the Kingdom and the Life of the Church." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 145:577 (January-March 1988):30-46.

\_\_\_\_\_. "'Sinners' Who Are Forgiven or 'Saints' Who Sin?" *Bibliotheca Sacra* 152:608 (October-December 1995):400-12.

Schaeffer, Francis A. *Death in the City*. Chicago: Inter-Varsity Press, 1969.

Schreiner, Thomas R. "The Church as the New Israel and the Future of Ethnic Israel." *Studia Biblica et Theologica* 13:1 (April 1983):17-38.

\_\_\_\_\_. "Does Romans 9 Teach Individual Election unto Salvation? Some Exegetical and Theological Reflections." *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 36:1 (March 1993):25-40.

Scoggins, John M., Jr. "Romans 1:18 as Key to the Structure of the Letter." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 175:700 (October-December 2018):411-24.

Shedd, William G. T. *A Critical and Doctrinal Commentary on the Epistle of St. Paul to the Romans*. Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 1967.

Showers, Renald E. *There Really Is a Difference! A Comparison of Covenant and Dispensational Theology*. Bellmawr, N.J.: The Friends of Israel Gospel Ministry, Inc., 1990.

Sibley, Jim R. "Has the Church Put Israel on the Shelf? The Evidence from Romans 11:15." *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 58:3 (September 2015):571-81.

\_\_\_\_\_. "Israel and the Gospel of Peter, Paul, and Abraham." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 173:689 (January-March 2016):18-31.

Simmons, William A. "Priest—Sacrifice—Life as Worship: A Pauline Matrix for Understanding Romans." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 172:685 (January-March 2015):85-99.

Spurgeon, Charles Haddon. *An All Round Ministry*. Reprint ed. London and Carlisle, Pa.: The Banner of Truth Trust, 1900, 1972.

Stedman, Ray. *From Glory to Glory*. 2 vols. Waco: Word, 1978.

Stendahl, Krister. "Hate, Non-Retaliation, and Love: 1 QS x, 17-20 and Rom. 12:19-20." *Harvard Theological Review* 55(1962):343-55.

Stewart, James S. *A Man in Christ: The Vital Elements of St. Paul's Religion*. 1935. Reprint ed. London: Hodder & Stoughton Ltd., 1964.

Stifler, James M. *The Epistle to the Romans*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1960.

Stott, John R. W. *Basic Introduction to the New Testament*. 1<sup>st</sup> American ed. Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1964.

\_\_\_\_\_. *Men Made New: An Exposition of Romans 5—8*. London: InterVarsity Press, 1966.

Strauss, Steve. "Missions Theology in Romans 15:14-33." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 160:640 (October-December 2003):457-74.

Strickland, Wayne G. "Preunderstanding and Daniel Fuller's Law-Gospel Continuum." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 144:574 (April-June 1987):181-93.

Swindoll, Charles R. *Come before Winter ... and Share My Hope*. Portland: Multnomah Press, 1985.

\_\_\_\_\_. "Is the Holy Spirit Transforming You?" *Kindred Spirit* 18:1 (January-April 1994):4-7.

\_\_\_\_\_. *The Mystery of God's Will*. Nashville: Word Publishing, 1999.

\_\_\_\_\_. *The Swindoll Study Bible*. Carol Stream, Ill.: Tyndale House Publishers, 2017.

Taylor, Clyde W. "Christian Citizens." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 122:487 (July-September 1965):200-14.

Tenney, Merrill C. *The New Testament: An Historical and Analytic Survey*. Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1953, 1957.

*The New Testament in Modern English*. Translated by J. B. Phillips. New York: Macmillan Co., 1958.

*Theological Dictionary of the New Testament*. Edited by Gerhard Kittel and Gerhard Friedrich. Translated and edited by Geoffrey W. Bromiley. 1964-76 ed. 10 vols. S.v. "opsonion," by Hans Wolfgang Heidland, 5(1967):591-92.

\_\_\_\_\_. S.v. "*soma*," by Edward Schweizer and Friedrich Baumgärtel, 7(1971):1024-94.

*The Theological Wordbook*. Edited by Charles R. Swindoll and Roy B. Zuck. Swindoll Leadership Library series. 2000. S.v. "Foreknowledge," by John F. Walvoord, pp. 128-30.

Thiessen, Henry Clarence. *Introduction to the New Testament*. Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1943, 1962.

Thomas, Robert L. *Evangelical Hermeneutics: The New Versus the Old*. Grand Rapids: Kregel Publications, 2002.

Thomas, W. H. Griffith, *Grace and Power*. Reprint ed. Nashville: Thomas Nelson Publishers, 1984.

\_\_\_\_\_. *St. Paul's Epistle to the Romans*. Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1946.

Thompson, Claude. "Social Reform: An Evangelical Imperative." *Christianity Today* (March 26, 1971), 8-12 [588-92].

Toussaint, Stanley D. "The Contrast Between the Spiritual Conflict in Romans 7 and Galatians 5." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 123:492 (October-December 1966):310-14.

\_\_\_\_\_. "Suffering in Acts and the Pauline Epistles." In *Why, O God? Suffering and Disability in the Bible and the Church*, pp. 183-93. Edited by Larry J. Waters and Roy B. Zuck. Wheaton: Crossway, 2011.

Toussaint, Stanley D., and Jay A. Quine. "No, Not Yet: The Contingency of God's Promised Kingdom." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 164:654 (April-June 2007):131-47.

Towns, Elmer L. "Martin Luther on Sanctification." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 125:502 (April-June 1969):115-22.

Tozer, A. W. *The Knowledge of the Holy*. New York, et al.: Harper & Row Publishers, 1961.

\_\_\_\_\_. "Total Commitment." *Decision* 4:8 (August 1963):4.



Trench, Richard C. *Synonyms of the New Testament*. Ninth ed. London: James Clarke & Co., 1961.

Ukleja, P. Michael. "Homosexuality in the New Testament." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 140:560 (October-December 1983):350-58.

Van den Doel, Anthonie. "Submission in the New Testament." *Brethren Life and Thought* 31:2 (Spring 1986):121-25.

Verbrugge, Verlyn D. "The Grammatical Internal Evidence for 'EXOMEN in Romans 5:1.'" *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 54:3 (September 2011):559-72.

Vine, W. E. *The Epistle to the Romans*. Revised ed. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1957.

Vos, Gerhardus. *The Pauline Eschatology*. Princeton, N.J.: By the author, 1930.

Wall, Joe L. *Going for the Gold*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1991.

Walvoord, John F. *The Millennial Kingdom*. Revised ed. Findlay, Ohio: Dunham Publishing Co., 1963.

Warfield, Benjamin B. *The Plan of Salvation*. Revised ed. Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., n. d..

Waters, Larry J. "Paradoxes in the Pauline Epistles." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 167:668 (October-December 2010):423-41.

Way, Arthur S. *The Letters of St. Paul and Hebrews*. Reprint. ed. Chicago: Moody Press, 1950.

Wedderburn, A. J. M. "Some Observations on Paul's Use of the Phrases 'In Christ' and 'With Christ'." *Journal for the Study of the New Testament* 25 (October 1985):83-97.

Wenham, John. "The Identification of Luke." *Evangelical Quarterly* 63:1 (1991):3-44.

Wiersbe, Warren W. *The Bible Exposition Commentary*. 2 vols. Wheaton, Ill.: Victor Books, Scripture Press, 1989.

Wilkin, Robert N. "Assurance by Inner Witness?" *Grace Evangelical Society News* 8:2 (March-April 1993):2-3.

\_\_\_\_\_. *Confident in Christ: Living by Faith Really Works*. Irving, Tex.: Grace Evangelical Society, 1999.

\_\_\_\_\_. "Obedience to the Faith: Romans 1:5." *Grace in Focus* 10:6 (November-December 1995):2-4.

\_\_\_\_\_. *Secure and Sure: Grasping the Promises of God*. Irving, Tex.: Grace Evangelical Society, 2005.

Williams, Charles B. *A Commentary on the Pauline Epistles*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1953.

Williams, Jarvis. "Violent Atonement in Romans: The Foundation of Paul's Soteriology." *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 53:3 (September 2010):579-99.

Williams, Philip R. "Paul's Purpose in Writing Romans." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 128:509 (January-March 1971):62-67.

Wilson, Marvin R. *Our Father Abraham: Jewish Roots of the Christian Faith*. Grand Rapids: William B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., and Dayton, Ohio: Center for Judaic-Christian Studies, 1989.

Witmer, John A. "The Man with Two Countries." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 133:532 (October-December 1976):338-49.

\_\_\_\_\_. "Romans." In *The Bible Knowledge Commentary: New Testament*, pp. 435-503. Edited by John F. Walvoord and Roy B. Zuck. Wheaton, Ill.: Scripture Press Publications, Victor Books, 1983.

Wood, Leon. *The Holy Spirit in the Old Testament*. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1976.

Wright, N. T. *The Climax of the Covenant*. Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark, 1991.

Wuest, Kenneth S. *Word Studies in the Greek New Testament*. Reprint ed. 16 vols. in 4. Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1966.

Young, Richard Alan. "The Knowledge of God in Romans 1:18-23: Exegetical and Theological Reflections." *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 43:4 (December 2000):695-707.

Zuck, Roy B. "Cheap Grace?" *Kindred Spirit* 13:2 (Summer 1989):4-7.

\_\_\_\_\_. "The Doctrine of Conscience." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 126:504 (October-December 1969):329-40.